Alexander, Rev. William P., Sept. 23, 1844 – Sept. 13, 1859. 1–38½

The Richards House, and plans of the land 9–16

Oahu College 20

Visit to the U. States 29–38½

His views on a native ministry 34

Andrews, Claudius B., april 8, 1850 – may 22, 1855. 39–51

Considerations on a mission to Micronesia 39

Declines a connection with said mission 43, 44

Proposes Hannah M. Reeve as a missionary 45–47

Inconveniences of the voyage in the "Esther May" 51

Andrews, Seth L. (M.D.) may 24, 1847 – april 18, 1853. 52–80

Letter from Titus Coan 53

Visit to the United States 54, etc.

Matrimonial affairs 59, 60, 64–70. Marriage 72.

Dismission from the service of the Board 75–79

Armstrong, Richard, July 1, 1844 – Oct. 1859. 81–165

Succeeds Mr. H. Bingham as pastor _in full_, at Honolulu 81, 82

Report of the Station at Honolulu 83, 85.

Policy of the Government. Mr. Brown 83

P. A. Brinsmade & Ladd & Co, their hostility 84

On assuming the office of Minister of Public Instruction 85–88, 94.

Correspondence with A. Ten Eyck, in reference to an article in the "Plaindealer", Cleveland, Ohio } 89–93

The French at the Sandwich Islands 96, 99, 100, 103, 104, 163.

Letters from Mrs. Clarissa C. Armstrong, on a visit to U.S. 105, 106

A preacher for the foreign residents at Honolulu 107, 108, 110

R.C. Wyllie not a Temperance man. Salaries. The Secular agency 109

S. N. Castle. The New Constitution – John Ii, his noble &c. 112

Punahou School 109, 112, 113, 114–117, 125, 126, 161.

The native Atlas 118 – 121, 129, 130.
Endeavors to remove him from office 121–123
Efforts to procure annexation to the U.S. 122, 123, 125, 126.
Oahu College 125–128, 133–142, 151–160, 164
Letter from Hon. Reuben A. Chapman 131
Obituary notice of Kamehameha III. Character of K. IV. 132
Dissatisfaction with Mr Dole as a teacher. He resigns. 134
Castle & Cooke 142
E. G. Beckwith ordained. E. W. Clark & the H. Mis. Soc. 144
The Morning Star 145, 152.
Visits the U. States 146–150
Returns to the Islands. Inability of some to meet exps. 151
Bailey, Edward, Aug. 23, 1843 – Nov. 2, 1858, 166–179
Change of relations to the Board 171, 174
Difficulties with Rev. D. T. Conde & Wailuku Chh. 173
Baldwin, Dwight, Sept. 21, 1844 – May 31, 1859, 180–214
His children – their prospects 181, 182, 185.
Vindication of himself 183
Mr. Alexander's proposal to buy the Richards house 187, 189, 190
Requests a dismission, on the basis of 7th resolution 188
Lands in Lahaina, their supposed value 192
Statement respecting the "Wharf Lot" 192½
Necessity for bathing, in the torrid zone 193
On a division of Lahaina. Repeats his request for dismission 194
Introduces Charles Bunker, late consul of U.S. 195
A Call from Marquesas (printed slip) 196
Vindicates himself agt. the charge of "unkindness" 197
Proposes to visit the U.S. on account of ill health 199–201

Visit ~~Returns~~ to America 203-212

Support of the gospel at Lahaina by the natives 207

Letter from Castle & Cooke to Mr. Baldwin 208

Remarks on the same 209

Mr. Conde & his difficulties - Oahu College 210

Mr. Beckwith's visit to U.S. Mr. Armstrong 211

Requests the Comt. to pay the passages of his children 212

Returns to Lahaina. Increased religious interest 213

History of his medical practice 214

Letter from him in Vol. 232, No. 209.

Baldwin, William O. april 17, 1854 - Dec. 17, 1859. 215-222

Preparations for leaving this country 215-218

Condition of his field of labor 219

Failure of Mrs. Baldwin's health 220-222

Beckwith, Edward G. June 13, 1857 - Sept. 14, 8. 223-234, 361½

Proceedings while soliciting funds in the U.S. 223-231

Interview with President Buchanan 226

Returns to the Islands & resumes his duties there 232

Beckwith, George E. June 3 & 26, 1858. 235, 236

Bingham, Hiram, March 18, 1847 - Feb. 2, 1854. 237-240.

His children - wishes aid for them 237

Death of his wife 238

The question of his return to the islands 239

Mistake in the Report, announcing his decease 240

[See several letters from him in Vol. 267, Nos 283-314. "Miscellaneous Domestic Letters"

Bishop, Artemas, Nov. 15, 1844 - June 14, 1859. 241-255

Self-support. Want of thrift & energy in the natives 241

An imperfectly-developed christianity 242

Influx of foreigners - children of foreigners by native women 242
Making butter to support a family. Mr. Richards 241, 243
Loneliness. Desires to visit the U. S. 244, 245
Proposal to relinquish support from the Board, & obtain support from his people } 246, 247
The measure consummated 248, 249
Discouragements. Degraded character of the people 249
Influence of the California excitement. The small pox 251, 252.
Failure of health. Removal to Honolulu. Capt. Moore 254
"Daily Food". Printing. Mr. Clark 255
Letters from his son, Sereno E. Bishop, in the U. States 1851-52 256-258

Bond, Elias, April 8, 1844 - Nov. 9, 1859. 259-288
Reports of the station at Kohala 259-261
Strictures on the glowing accounts of some & the reverse 261
The Schools. Efforts to train the people to benevolence 261
Native houses, no improvement. A native ministry 261
Licentiousness of the people. Unsound X^n. of native preachers 262
Change of relation toward the Board. Discussions on it 263
Mr. Dimond. Mr. Bailey. The secular agency 263
Censure of some of the other missionaries. Mr. Coan 264
Destruction of his meeting house by a storm 264
Mr. Dimond's case. Downward tendencies 266, -268
Money-making missionaries. Mr. Hall 267
The mission to Micronesia. Purchasing land 269
Release from the service of the Board 270
Wasteful habits. Salaries too large. Want of spirituality 271
Disinterested secular labors for the good of the natives 272
Vindicates himself ag^t. imputations made by the Committee 273

Rebuilding of the house of worship. Religious interest 276
Substantial progress. Incompetency of native preachers 277
Hawaiian licentiousness. Influence of foreigners. Mr. Paris 278
Teaching English to the natives does no good 280
Contributions for the "Morning Star" 281
Contributions for religious purposes 282
Arrival of the Morning Star 283
Mr. Clark unfit to be Co. Sec. of the Haw. Miss. Soc. 284
Unwise proceedings of that Soc. Mr. Emerson worldly 286
Religious declension. Low state of morals. Mr. Dole. 286
Bad state of the churches on Oahu. Punahou College 287
Punahou College. Mr. Beckwith. Hawaiian Miss. Soc. 288

Castle, Samuel N. Jan. 25, 1845 – Oct. 18, 1859. 289–410

The French at the Sandwich Islands 297, 306
Proclamation of the French admiral 296
Mr. Dimond's case 299, 300
The Secular agency 302, 306
Mr. Alexander's application for the Richards house 306
Mrs. Chamberlain 320.
Loans made by the secular agents 321, 322
Method of keeping accounts with the Board, &c. 324
Replies to inquiries touching Mr. Rogers 325
Remarks respecting the supposed grasping spirit of the missionaries 327
Estimated expenses of the mission for 1853 336
Draft of proposed charter for Punahou School 337

Castle & Cooke 313, 357, 364, 365, 376. {See a letter from Mr. Castle in Vol. 234: No. 38}

Cooke, Amos S. 290, 304
Brown, Lydia 275
Smith, Lowell 366.
Spooner, W. A. 393

ABC 19.1 v.14

Index

Alexander, William P.

1. A.L. to D. Greene; 23 Sept. 1844
2. A.L. to R. Anderson; 27 Oct. 1847
3. A.L. to R. Anderson; 19 Nov.1847
4. A.L. to R. Anderson; 3 Feb. 1849
5. A.L. to R. Anderson; 14 May 1849

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

1 Lahainaluna Sept 3/44

233

Rev D. Greene

Dear Sir

Shortly after our last gen! meeting, we addressed a joint communication to you from this Semy, in accordance with a vote of the gen! meeting, urging upon the prud. Com. to send us a helper. Since that letter was written, our necessity has been greatly increased. More than two months ago br Dibble was taken with bleeding from the lungs, from which he had suffered on former occasions. He was brought so low by frequent bleedings that we had little hope of his surviving the attack. In great mercy the Lord has spared him to be a light in his family & I hope he will yet aid us much in building up this school. He is still however too feeble to resume his labors, except so far as to attend to a theological class who meet him one hour per day at his residence.

If this seminary is worthy of being sustained atall, it ought to be sustained efficiently, otherwise, what is expended upon it in funds & effort will be expended to no purpose

Br H. T. Cheever, who will take this, sails tomorrow morning. He has been in my family for about three months, was with br Dibble, as nurse, during his late illness, & will be able to give you accurate information about the seminary, its wants &c.
We esteem br. Cheever very highly for his piety, amiability, goodness, intelligence &c & hope when he has completed the study of medicine he will return to these islands under the auspices of our Board. He has visited all the stations in our field except Waimea on Hawaii, & those on Kauai. He will be able therefore to give you much information from observation on points not often touched upon in our letters. I throw out this that you may embrace the opportunity of making enquiries, as he is so modest that he will not be likely to obtrude any thing upon your notice.
We have now about 87 pupils. Assisted by Kamakau, I am endeavoring to teach them mathematics, & am preparing a nat. philosophy, taking Comstock's

as my guide.
Br. Emerson is almost wholly devoted to teaching English, & preparing an Eng & Hawaiian dictionary-
Neither br Emerson nor I have been able to take upon us in addition the department of br Dibble, since his illness- The largest part of my work is not teaching or making books, but consists rather in the guardianship of the boys, exercising a parental government over them: administering to them when sick, supplying them with food & laying in such other supplies as are necessary for their wardrobe & stationery, & for the repairs of the establishment generally- Indeed the work of guardian, physician & treasurer is, itself a sufficient field of labor for one man-
I trust a kind providence will point out to you the very man that we need- one who can work happily with his associates, a good scholar & especially a good Musician-
My family are all in pretty good health my two oldest sons are at school at Punahou doing well-

Your affectionate brother in the gospel
W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander
Lahainaluna, 23d Sept. 1844

Rec'd May 22. 1845

extd. in S. L. July 19

Rev. David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Sq.
Boston

Lahainaluna Oct 27th 1847

Rev R. Anderson D.D.
Boston

Dear brother

I am sorry that I have been so tardy in writing to you; I have been providentially hindered.

Besides your letters to the Mission, I have before me two letters addrefs to me individually & one to the teachers of the Semy. bearing dates March 6th /47. March 11. & June 4th.

I hope Mr Greene has recovered ere this, & that the heavy lofs in the death of Dr. Armstrong has been in some measure repaired.

We still hold on to Lahainaluna, having taken no measures to remove the Semy. since our last Genl. Meeting. Prior to that period a residence here was almost intolerable. Soon after our return from that Genl. Meeting, the heavens began to gather blackness & the clouds poured down rain & for 5 or 6 months the rains were more copious than had been experienced for 20 years. The loose dust which covered the whole side hill to several inches depth was washed away to the Ocean, & the whole surface carpeted with verdure.

Thus our locality presentes a new face one most inviting. In addition to this by the aid of Govt. an aqueduct, which had

been several years in progress, has been completed, by means of which we are now enabled to irrigate the side hill above our houses & thus perpetuate the green carpet which binds the dust in its folds. Hence I think the principle reason for seeking a change in the location of the Sem'y has ceased to operate.

On some accounts this is a very desirable location of the Sem'y. It is a very healthy location, the air dry & cool, the water rather better than can be obtained at any other station in the Islands. There is so much talo land in the neighborhood, that we can always get food enough for the school. We have here, moreover, a most valuable tract of land given by Govt. to the institution, capable of yielding food for more than 100 scholars. The facilities for getting supplies are unequaled except at Honolulu. In view of the whole case therefore, there is no probability that the institution will be removed.

In complying with your request to send you a history of the Seminary, I requested Mr. Clark to prepare such a sketch as you required, & the paper he has sent me I will forward with this, which together with an article in the Hawaiian Spectator of 1838 will render it unnecessary for me to add much

on the subject. The fundamental error committed in the early history of the school arose from overshooting the mark. An institution was contemplated containing 3 or 400 pupils & 8 or 10 professors. Hence the great Seminary building which is now three times as capacious as is needed - Hence too Greek Readers & Testaments sent out for a class studying the dead languages & a font of greek type! At one period, Dr. Andrews' mind teemed with utopian schemes. The Lithographic Press was a present besore, but it had better never have been sent out, for it would cost too much to use it even if we had the requisite skill.

I think also we committed an error when we made the English language a department of study in the institution; because it is impossible to communicate such a knowledge of the language to Hawaiian pupils during their course here, while they pursue their studies in every other department in the Hawaiian language, as would be of any value to a minister of the gospel. They could not so acquire English as to be able to consult theological books or even read newspapers. The utmost that they would acquire would be the ability to converse a little with sailors & to chaffer with foreigners in the market. The experiment of Mr. Emerson's labors for three years fully established

v !! English

these positions. Moreover while the knowledge of English which was here communicated, in no wise advanced the cause for which we are laboring, it did tend to frustrate it. For one of our pupils who can talk a little Eng. & who is also a good accountant is on account of his Eng a more desirable clerk for the Merchant than he otherwise would be. Hence his smattering of Eng. exposes him to be tempted to turn aside from the work for which we have labored to qualify him. These are some of the reasons why we have droped the department of teaching Eng.

Mr Hunt & I are aided at present by Ua a native assistant, whom we highly esteem. I have charge of the department formerly sustained by Br Dibble, to which has been added Anatomy, Nat. Phil & Astronomy. Br. Hunt with the help of Ua has charge of every thing else.

I have been engaged for nearly three years preparing a text book of theology & it is now in the press. I have almost ready for the press a work on the Evidences of Christianity. Hitherto I have been obliged to communicate all my instructions orally, & when the pupil has once forgotten what he hears, he has no means of refreshing his memory, & hence I have been anxious for textbooks on these subjects.

The present number of our pupils is 84, thirteen of whom are in the theological class. As the 1st class consisted of ou 13 & it was thought theological knowledge was the best sort of knowledge for them all, there has been no division made in the class in the study of theology, although, in regard to some, we have no expectation that they will ever become preachers of the gospel. Indeed we are obliged to hope against wind & tide in order to hope atall that we shall in our day raise up a native ministry. 1st The candidates who are atall promising are so exceedingly scarce in the islands & 2dly Of those who are promising, so many blast our hopes by apostacy, by greediness after filthy lucre or love of fame. & 3dly In regard to such as hold out well till they have finished their course of study, when they return to their fields, the brethren are extremely reluctant to license them to preach.

We rejoiced in a work of grace in the Seminary, last winter & spring, & during that period our hopes were encouraged. The pious students then felt determined to aim at the gospel ministry. But the current has wonderfully changed. Of the class which graduated last spring, two have become Surveyors for his Majesty's govt. & one is appointed Supreme Judge for the island of Hawaii.

"Unstable as water", like children who when one of their number has found a pretty toy, they all rush in quest of one like it; so now our pupils are all on fire to get offices under government. Very few indeed profess still to desire the work of the gospel ministry. Of those who went out last spring, candidates for the ministry, none have yet been licensed. There is an exceeding reluctance on the part of brethren to bring them forward. One of these married a pupil of Mr. Baily's school, highly esteemed by her teacher but not a <u>member of the church</u>; ~~The~~ field to which he was destined was one of the largest & most needy in the islands; but for the offence of having married a wife who was not a member of the church, the missionary in that field wrote word, that if he went thither he not only would not employ him to preach, but would not allow him the fellowship of the church. Another pupil, a member of the same class, who besides being a good general scholar & hopefully pious, had spent two years studying theology under Mr Dibble, & two under my instruction, & was esteemed a young man of more mature mind than any in his class. He had been <u>seven years</u> here at the Seminary & was sent off to a destitute field with high recommendations from the teachers of the Sem'y. The missionary

to whom he was sent, after a month or two writes thus. "— is here and teaches a school, which I think is about as high as he ought to go at present. I am sure it will not be well for him or for us or for the cause of Christ to give him the office of Kahunapule (preacher) at present. He conducts a meeting on Sabbath.

Mr. Armstrong's licensed preacher has made a sad fall. Let us be careful. Even the best of them are ignorant degraded heathen. I wish the impressions at the Rooms in Boston about a native ministry could be thoroughly corrected." The majority of our mission are not favorably inclined to bringing forward a native ministry owing to their want of stability & sound judgment.

~~Are~~ it not to be concealed that some, from love of power, seem disinclined to settle a native pastor over any part of their parish. I have thus freely stated our discouragements that you may have a full view of the subject, & that you may not feel disappointed even if the desires of the Board are not realized for a long time to come. We are urged to press forward our work to its results, which I suppose means, get a native ministry &c established, so that the American chh. may withdraw from this field. In looking at the state of things here, I do not see any prospect that the time is near when the Hawaiian chh. can be left to themselves.

Still however I do believe that God has a people here & that in due time he will raise up from among them pastors to feed them. How soon he will do this I cannot tell. He will probably first try our faith & patience & teach us more fully how entirely we depend on his grace.

I am sorry we used the word "chided" in our report to the last Genl. Meeting, it was too strong a word. All that was really meant was, that we as a mission have been earnestly urged to press forward, to quicken our pace in the work of raising up ministers from among the people.

I think you are right in the opinion that missionaries ought not to be designated as to their locations in Boston. Better leave that to the Mission. I rejoice to hear that some are coming out, for we are becoming weak. Death & removals have so thinned our ranks that we can hardly sustain our various posts. Indeed Kaū can hardly be said to have a missionary now. Br. Paris resides at Hilo & makes occasional tours into Kaū. Since Br. Forbes left Kealakekua, that large field has been very imperfectly manned. Br. Ives cannot do all that is called for in that great field. Br. Lyons is breaking down, almost blind. Thus you see Hawaii is becoming destitute & thus I might go on throughout our field.

(Br. Forbes & family have just sailed for the U.S., & on the same ship, Sister Dibble with her four orphans, also Saml. Emerson eldest son of br. J. S. Emerson. Br. Forbes goes on account of the ill health of his wife & to make provision for his children. We feel his loss, he was a first rate missionary. Sister Dibble, just as she was about to embark, got word by the Medora of the death of both Mr. & Mrs. Morton her foster parents, on whom she was expecting to lean in the U.S. Yet the Lord will provide.)

I am sorry that I have hitherto been unable to get sight of your letter to Mr. Clark. I have nothing particularly new to communicate on the subject of a return to the U.S. with my family. I have had more time to meditate upon & weigh the subject. In itself considered I do not desire to return: I believe I can be more useful here than I could there, for I would be about 20 years behind the age, entirely unaccustomed to English preaching, I would hardly make an acceptable preacher to any who use the Eng. language.

Yet I cannot consent to settle my children in these sunny isles & I have means of providing at Home for only one of seven children. Dr. De Witt of Harrisburg has kindly offered to take our Eldest son, & we shall probably

send him to his care a year hence. This will afford a temporary relief. The time however will soon arrive when our other children will be arriving at an age which will require decisive action on our part to enable them respectively to shape their course for some business for life. I do not believe it duty to send my children to the U.S. at a venture & impose on you at the Rooms the duty of seeking homes for them. I therefore see no other way than this, that in a few years, I must return with my family; & in that case, it is hardly probable that I ever would return hither. Broken down & worn out I would hardly be worth sending back, but then to return like a tree shorn of its leaves & limbs — to leave all my dear children for strangers to train is not in accordance with my theology or the feelings of my heart.

But when I return, in what light shall I appear? — Worn out & broken down in the foreign campaign, shall I appear as an abject beggar? or will it be consistent that some honorable provision be made for such? Perhaps I will find every thing on this subject in your letter to Mr. Clark.

I have perhaps wearied you & must close - My intention has been to write with the utmost frankness, & in doing this I have said some things concerning some of my brethren, which if repeated to them, might produce unpleasant feeling, & yet I thought it best to make the communication, & I now feel no concern, being persuaded you will make a discreet use of my letter.

My family all enjoy good health - Mrs. Alexander, however, is feeble. She feels the relaxing wilting power of this tropical climate - My three oldest sons are at the Punahou school - the oldest of whom

children

viz Wm. DeWitt gives reason to hope that he has become a disciple of the Lord Jesus. James McKinney the second is represented now as under deep concern for his soul - O that they may all be embraced in the Saviour's arms & then they are safe - Saml. Thos. my third son who is at the school is as yet careless on the subject of religion. My youngest son & three sweet daughters are at home with us.

The Lord bless you & give you wisdom & strength to perform your arduous work is the prayer of your brother in the gospel

W. P. Alexander

P. S. I forgot to inform you, that we devoted Sep. 9th to religious exercises & administered the Lord's Supper to the church here endeavoring to hold fellowship with our Board who like us were meditating on the great sacrifice offered for the redemption of our ruined race.

Rev. Wm P. Alexander,
Lahainaluna, Oct. 27. 1847.
Rec. Dec. 12. 1849.
Ans. Dec. 20/49
(Detained in a store at New York)
Pre. Sem'y — English teaching.

Rev. Rufus Anderson D.D.
Sec. A.B.C.F.M.
Missionary House
Boston
Mass.

Subjects:
Teaching English.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

Br. Forbes preached for us in the morning & gave a brief history of the origin, growth & present operations of the A.B.C.F.M. In the afternoon we found it good to come around the communion board & there hold fellowship with you who were there bowing around the same mercy seat. Very truly yours, W. P. Alexander.

Lahainaluna 19th Nov. 1837

Rev R. Anderson D.D.
Boston —

Dear Brother

I have very recently written to you at some length, & it may hardly seem proper that I should trouble you again so soon. But as I have had an opportunity of seeing your letter to Br. Clark, I wish to say something more on that subject in which I & my family now feel so deep an interest.

I have long since observed that the Christian public entertain an erroneous opinion both in regard to the character & the obligations of Missionaries. They consider them more holy than other Christians & consider them bound by the selfdenying doctrines of the gospel in a manner that other christians are not; but I can hardly suppose that you entertain erroneous views on these subjects. You know too much of the real character of Missionaries, & you have too often contemplated & urged upon the churches their common obligation to become coworkers with their Lord & Master in laboring to evangelise the world.

And yet the reasons you assign why
it is not proper for the P. Com. to make
definite provision for broken down
returned missionaries seem to me
to possess very little force unless it
is assumed that the missionary is bound
by peculiar obligations which rest not
on other christians.

You say the missionary should con-
struct no theory in respect to himself or
his family on any other principle than that
he is a servant of Christ. Is the
missionary peculiar in this? May other
Xns forget that they are servants of
Christ? Is seeking provision for ones
family inconsistent with the doctrine
that he is a servant of Christ? The
guide of Christians in general on
this subject is "But if any provide
not for his own, & especially for those of
his own house, he hath denied the
faith & is worse than an infidel."
Are not Christians, although they may
have become missionaries, bound still
by this obligation?

You add that the missionary
must take no thought for the
morrow, & must be careful for
nothing. Yet you surely would
not maintain that these passages
forbid the christian to provide
for his family. Have they a peculiar
meaning when applied to missionaries?

[Margin note:] The provision is a perquisite. R.A.

[Margin note:] We may be sent on [illegible] Xn [illegible] missions, even if others do not. [illegible] system will stand Missions. R.A.

Again you say Christ has promised to be with the missionary & what more can he want? A most blessed promise it is — a promise in which christians generally rejoice & not the missionary only. His promise to be with us does not in any degree diminish the necessity of prudence & effort on our part, but rather the contrary.

Again you say, the work is a work of faith, & you seem to be confident that the Master will raise up pecuniary means to sustain systematic arrangements for supporting those who go out to labor among the heathen; while you feel no such confidence in reference to those whose duty is to return broken down & encumbered with large families to their native land. Where is the ground of confidence in the one case that fails in the other?

[Margin note: Is it their duty?]

Why is it considered proper by the Board, when the missionary is young & vigorous & unencumbered too to pledge him a support in the foreign field & yet improper to make any pledge or systematic provision for him when compelled to return & when for the most part, he is unable to help himself?

You intimate that to make such provision would weaken his faith

in God. Then I ask why make this provision for him when he is young & needs it less, & when moreover he especially needs an active lively faith in God?

You suggest that the missionary's obligation to be a missionary does not rest on the pledge of the churches to support him. That is undoubtedly true; neither does the obligation of any gospel minister to preach rest on the promise of the people to support him - Woe be unto the one & the other, if he preach not the gospel - yet no man goeth a warfare at his own charges. It is the duty of the churches to support the preachers of the gospel, & the preachers of the gospel whether missionary or not are no more bound to preach the gospel than to provide for their families.

You feel just as we do, when you say you would never think of bequeathing your wife & children to the churches of Mass. We do not wish to bequeath ours to the chhs of the U.S. I presume you would not leave your family homeless & pennyless, if it were possible for you to make some provision for them. But rather after doing what you can to provide for them, then you may be ready to commit them to the Lord.

[illegible]

[illegible]

The A. B. C. F. M. have given no formal pledge that they will support returned missionaries, yet there is an implied pledge arising from the obligation which the missionary assumes, that he will engage in no business or transaction for private gain, & from his spending the prime of his life while receiving a bare support.

Other Drs & ministers while serving their master endeavor to provide for their own households, but the missionary has surrendered the ability thus to do for his household. The good of the missionary cause seemed to have required that he make this surrender & thus be enabled to devote his whole energies to propagating the gospel & avoid the odium which accumulating property by the missionary would bring on the cause. Having therefore thus surrendered the ability to provide for himself, the churches who pledged him a support in the foreign field stand virtually pledged to provide for him when old & broken down, it becomes his duty to return to that goodly land.

This provision ought not to be considered a charity but a just debt. If this is so, then a reasonable Christian

public can be made to feel & appreciate the truth, & furnish what is necessary to sustain the obligation that it implies. Until something of this sort is done, the system of missions will be found to be seriously defective.

I trust the Committee will review the subject & yet arrive at another conclusion. I am persuaded the ground assumed in your letter will lead to results unfriendly to the cause in our field, & probably the same will be true in other missions. Some who are broken down & worn out will be led to remain here in the field a great burden to the mission, & often the principle energies of a vigorous missionary will be employed in taking care of such; while such would gladly have returned to the U.S. had there been even a small provision made for them there.

Again others will haste back in the meridian of life, while they are able to take care of themselves. Many of my brethren say to me, "if you expect ever to return to the U.S. you ought to go soon while you have some vigor left."

It is exceedingly desirable that missionaries who have mastered the

language of the country who also understands the customs of the people & are therefore qualified to labor to good purpose — that they should be enabled to work on with all their energies, as long as the circumstances of their families might allow.

I have only one thing more to add, & that is to request the approbation of the Prud. Com. to my returning to the U.S. with my family two or three years hence. I would not be willing to defer it so long, but a kind providence has relieved my mind in reference to my eldest son, by making satisfactory provision for him, & my other children can do well for a few more years at the islands.

Whether I shall ever return again is doubtful. I wish however to leave that to the same kind hand that has led me all my life.)

On the 4th inst a council of Ministers met at my house, consisting of Rev Messrs Clark, Baldwin, Hunt, Andrews & myself & after a rigid examination of Kamoealoha, one of our late pupils, licensed him to preach the gospel of Christ.

I do hope he will make one of the pastors of the Hawaiian chhs raised up from their own bosom. If we had fifty such, then the prospects of the nation would brighten but alas, like all other truly precious things they are scarce.

You will hear from other sources ~~that~~ our dear br Richards is no more. I am filled with distress to hear there is a great effort to get a missionary to succeed to his office as Minister of Public Instruction. Mr Armstrong has been elected by the Privy Council, & he has an inkling for the office, but I trust he will so regard the voice of his brethren as to reject the offer. Br. C. B. Andrews too has been talked of. My prayer is that no more of our band may be allowed to forsake their appropriate work & embark on the wild whirlpool of politics.

Very truly yours

Wm P. Alexander

P. S.

Nov 18th

I had not intended to say any thing in regard to the feelings of Br. Hunt, as I supposed he was not yet ready to communicate with you respecting them but as he has just read me a letter to you, asking a release from the Missionary work, it may be proper for me to say a word.

He is a dear lovely brother & a faithful servant of the Lord & his wife is one of the excellent of the earth - They are both loved & highly esteemed by all the mission

I rejoiced greatly when he was appointed to the Seminary & now only regret that my relation to him shall probably be so short. I have conversed much with him in respect to his feelings during the past month or two & right or wrong they are just as he has expressed them in his letter to you - That I consider a faithful picture of the feelings of his soul.

I regret that he feels so, but feeling so I think he had better return to the U.S. where he may labor with heart & soul Thus you see we are being weakened, one after another is expecting to go, & unless we are reinforced in proportion we shall soon have to abandon some of our posts - Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander.

Lahainaluna, Nov. 19, 1847.

Rec^d. Apr. 25, 1848

ans^d. June 17

Fer. Pru^d. Com^d.

His return —

Return of families.

Mr. Hunt's case.

[illegible]

Lahainaluna Feb 3d 1849

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

Your letter to the mission of July 19th '48 has been read, as you may suppose, with deep interest by us. Truly we live in a day of revolution, not of empires only, missions too must have their share. I have long been persuaded that the method of supporting foreign missions must be modified sooner or later, that the responsibilities of the Board to superannuated Missionaries to missionary widows &c would become unwieldy as the system enlarged & advanced, & therefore that to carry forward the work of missions on a very large scale with married missionaries the Board must by some means shake off this responsibility or atleast employ their missionaries whom they shall hereafter send out on different principles such perhaps as those acted upon by the Home Missionary society.

The revolution contemplated in regard to our mission, I think, is too great, & if carried out it will mar our work. Already some brethren are full of plans for farms, & I hear of one making small shipments to the

California market. I apprehend your fears will be more than realized in regard to the scrambling after wealth that will spring up among us, if the 7th resolution of the Prud. Com. is carried out. The old rule "No missionary shall engage in any business or transaction for private gain" was perhaps wrong as it cut us off from our natural rights; but the sudden change from that to the system now proposed will I fear make our most fine gold become dim.

The Brethren of Honolulu have called a meeting in April, tho the Hilo & Kau Brethren have remonstrated saying they cannot get ready before May & I presume the meeting will not be held till May. I trust the great Head of the Church will then guide us to right conclusions.

I feel grateful to the Committee for having consented to my return to the U.S. I of course will decide nothing in regard to it until I meet the Brethren in General meeting. But I think it extremely probable that I shall desire to return the coming autumn —

taking my whole family with me, & if like Mr Richards I should be so happy as to find suitable homes for my older children, I shall hope to return with the younger ones & resume my labors here.

The prospects of the native race are gloomy indeed. The hand of the Lord has been heavy upon them. The measles, hooping cough & influenza have swept off a tenth of the whole population in a few months. Those who remain are enfeebled & dejected: the few who have a little enterprise left are rushing to the gold country of California.

Now the measures proposed by our Board, if adopted by us, will in effect turn our mission into colonists, withdraw their principal energies from the missionary work & transform them into planters mechanics merchants & officers of state.

Alas for the poor down trodden Hawaiian race, the Lord has a controversy with them.

Meanwhile the high representatives of the three great powers the U.S. Great Britain & France are confederate to overturn the government. Does the Lord intend to destroy the

nation? If so, why has he done so much for it? The whole horizon is covered with clouds & darkness. Oh that light might break in upon us when we meet together.

We have accomplished very little at the Seminary during the past year. Soon after our last Genl. Meeting, Mrs. Alexander was confined; after which she was called to endure the excruciating sufferings of three successive mammary abscesses, which was followed by a severe attack of phlegmasia dolens first in one limb then in the other so that for more than three months I was unable to do much for the school. Then the measles came with its desolating sweep, the hooping cough, the influenza, insomuch that our institution has been more a hospital that a seat of literature.

I look forward to our Genl. Meeting with great interest. The best interests of this nation & of the cause of missions ~~are~~ deeply involved in our decisions.

The Lord guide us in coun-sel & direct us in the right way.

Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. Wm. P. Alexander, Lahainaluna, Feb. 8, 1849.
Recd Oct. 7, 1849.

5 Honolulu May 14. 1849

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

You will see by the minutes of our late General Meeting, which closed a week ago, that we have adopted various measures tending to the much desired object, that the Hawaiian people sustain their own literary & religious institutions & thus cultivate those manly traits of character, which are incompatable with a state of dependence.

In order that the Seminary at Wailuku may become a selfsupporting institution, the mission have resolved to change it from a boarding to a day school, and directed the Trustees to correspond with the Prudential Committee in reference to the disposal of the mission property now in connection with that institution. The Trustees met on the 8th inst. and appointed me to write to you on their behalf on this subject.

In the neighborhood of Wailuku are many foreigners, who have native wives & who are anxious to secure a good education for their children. They are also both able and willing to pay for their education.

The half breeds are growing in importance in the Hawaiian community. As a class, they have more talent & more energy than the full blooded natives: their influence therefore will be great for good or for evil ~~in~~

~~the Hawaiian community~~ on the nation. We propose that Mr Bailey's school consist mainly of this class, not however excluding any native pupils who are able & willing to pay for tuition. The youth, doubtless, will improve their time more diligently & prize their education more highly when they pay for it, than when they receive it as a gratuity.

It is also proposed that Miss Ogden continue to occupy her present post, take a class of young misses, who will pay her for their board, whom she will instruct in the domestic arts of civilized life, & that this class also form part of Mr Bailey's day school.

Mr Bailey has proposed to carry on such a school, as I have described, independent of the funds of the Board, on the conditions of the 7th resolution contained in your letter of July last, provided also the Board give him the property now belonging to the Female Boarding School. This consists

1st Of the School house & dormitories, which will not be worth much except for the purpose of a boarding school. If they continue the property of the Board, he could not keep them in repair at his own expense & they must either become an annual bill of expense to the Board or go rapidly to decay. They are also so connected with his dwelling that they could not with propriety be sold

to whoever might be disposed to purchase them. But if they become his private property, he could at his discretion pull down a part to repair what would still be needed in carrying out the new plan of his school.

Miss Ogden's private dwelling is in the midst of the school house & dormitories, & all the privileges she now enjoys in the institution, whether in school houses, lands or apparatus &c ought to be secured to her as long as she may choose to enjoy them, in case you make the proposed transfer to Mr. Baily.

2d. The Philosophical Apparatus, which Mr. Baily wishes to employ in the proposed day school, & thus carry out the main design with which the Board sent them out.

3d. The Land connected with the school. This consists of acres, & was given to the mission by the Hawaiian Government, on condition that a boarding school for females be sustained there by us. Unless a school is kept up there, this land would revert to the Government. The Board therefore could not sell it & employ the funds derived from the sale in the general prosecution of their work. The Government here will take a liberal view of whatever tends to promote the cause of Education, and if the Board make over to Mr. Baily whatever right they hold in this land, the

government will probably give him an allodial title to it, on condition that he keep up the school described. Mr Baily thinks that with the aid of this land, his proportionate share of the herd at his station & tuition fees, he would be able to support his family independent of the funds of the Board.

Would it not therefore be true wisdom & economy for the Board, in accordance with the 7th resolution in your letter of July last, to give Mr Baily his house & premesies, his proportionate part of the Wailuku mission herd, together with the property of the Female Boarding School, on condition that he carry out the intentions of the mission in regard to a day school, independent of further aid from the Board? I believe it would, & hope you will comply with his proposition.

In making this arrangement, you will of course secure to Miss Ogden all the rights & privileges necessary for her comfort or usefulness. We esteem her most highly as a faithful & devoted fellow laborer in our work.

That the Lord would give you wisdom in all the measures you adopt is the prayer of your brothers in the gospel

W. P. Alexander
In behalf of the Trustees of Wailuku Seminary

Rev. W. P. Alexander
Honolulu May 14. 1849
Rec. Aug 4. 1849
Letter relating to the Female
the Wailuku Seminary

ABC 19.1 v.14

Alexander, William P.

6. A.L. to R. Anderson; 6 Nov. 1849
7. A.L. to R. Anderson; 17 Nov. 1849
8. A.L. to R. Anderson; 17 Nov. 1849 (copy of number 7.)
9. A.L. to R. Anderson; 21 March 1850
10. A.L. to R. Anderson; 14 Apr. 1850

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

ABC 19.1 v.14

Alexander, W.P.

11. Map attached to letter number 10.
12. A.L. to R. Anderson; 6 Nov. 1850
13. A.L. to R. Anderson; 6 June 1851
14. A.L. to R. Anderson; 17 June 1851
15. A.L. to R. Anderson; 3 Oct. 1857

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Honolulu Nov. 6th 1849.

Rev R. Anderson D.D.
Boston

Dear Brother

We heard with sorrow that ill health had compelled you for a season to retire from your post, & I regretted that you had not determined to make us a visit & recruit in our sunny isles. Indeed I do not think it too late yet, for even if you have recovered, there are still grave objects to be accomplished by such a visit. How important that in the transition state of our mission, that you & we perfectly understand each other. It would have been a great privelege at our last Genl. Meeting to have had you with us. Such of our mission as are passing from under the care of the Board are engaged in a very critical experiment, & all the wisdom that can be brought to bear upon it is needed.

I left my home at Lahainaluna last thursday & came hither with my eldest son William De Witt for the purpose of sending him to the U.S.A. on board the Montreal, which expects to sail in a few days with a large missionary company,

My son will be about 17 years of age when he reaches the U.S. He goes in excellent company, Mrs Richards & her two daughters, Mr Paris & his two daughters, Mr C. B. Andrews & the eldest sons each of Messrs Clark & Hitchcock – Besides Miss Tewksbury & Mr Stanley. I have commended my son to the special guardianship of Mr Paris on the passage, & I expect him to go to Harrisburg Pa. to the fostering care of Rev Wm R. DeWitt D.D. who will receive him as a son and whom I have empowered to perform all the acts of Guardian for him. I trust the means will not be wanting for my son to pursue his studies till his education is complete & that the Lord will direct him to the work he would have him do & open a field of usefulness before him. I commend him to your paternal care for counsel & advice as far as you may have an opportunity of affording it.

I am glad Mr Andrews has determined to go, although for the present it leaves the whole Seminary on my hands. He has been an indefatigable faithful laborer here in the Lord's vineyard, & we can illy spare him now, but hope to receive him back again soon, more than doubled. I know of no brother who has been more wholly given to his work than he. He goes beloved by the people & by all his brethren.

I hope too that br Paris will return to health as
Few of our number command so much of the
affections & esteem of their brethren. These
brethren are both comparatively young, are
masters of the Hawaiian language, are
attached to the people & beloved by them, it
is therefore much more important that
they return than that new men come
& take their places.

When I left Lahainaluna last April to
attend Genl. Meeting, I expected to have made
arrangements to have been embarking
about this time with all my family for
the U. S. but after conferring with the
brethren I determined to hold on yet
longer. My own health has been so poor
since our Genl. Meeting that I have been
able to accomplish very little & unless
it can be recruited, it is hardly worth
while for me to remain here. I have
thought of shaking off the cares of the
Seminary, if possible, for a few months
or a year & engaging in some active
employment, such as travelling or
surveying land for the people. In the
latter employment I could earn enough
to support my family. If by some
such means I could regain my health
the necessity of returning to the U. S. soon
might be removed. All the brethren whom
I have consulted think favorably of the plan

provided the Seminary can be sustained.

Br. Andrews, who has been associated with me in labor at the Seminary ever since Br Hunt left will be able to inform you perfectly as to the present condition & prospects of the Seminary — I could say much on that subject, but need not now, I feel very anxious that the institution should be well sustained now that it is under the patronage of Govt.

Although the Government now pays my salary over into the funds of the mission I have not felt willing to ask a dissolution of my connection with the Board. I am getting old, have a large family & am broken down — Under such circumstances prudence & duty direct me to hold on to the A. B. C. F. M. for a support. If by laboring in the Government Seminary or otherwise with the approbation of the brethren of the mission I can save the Board from expending any thing on my support it will be well; but if I am prostrate it is right that I should lean on the Board.

We all do wax old as a leaf. Soon our work & yours too will be assigned to other hands & we called to give an account of our stewardship. Let us so labor that we shall do it with joy —

Very truly your brother in the gospel

W. P. Alexander

Rev. Wm. P. Alexander
Wailuku [illegible] 1859
Recd April 6 1860
[illegible]

7 Honolulu Nov 17th 1849

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

I wrote to you last week giving some account of the destination, prospects &c. of my eldest son Wm. DeWitt, who sails on the Montreal for New Bedford, in the large company, who expect to leave our islands today. I also spoke of my health & of the probable necessity of engaging in some active employment for a few months or a year. The Govt. are laboring to dissolve the old feudal system, & to give the people allodial titles to their lands: for this purpose it will be necessary that the lands be surveyed. I have thought that the work of surveying might afford the very exercise I need & thus allow me to recruit my health in performing a valuable work for the nation & meanwhile support my family without any expense to the Board. All the brethren whom I have been able to consult advise me to adopt this course, so soon as the Sem'y at Lahainaluna can spare me. Several months will doubtless elapse before a helper can be got there to take charge of the school.

It is probable, that if I am able to prosecute the work of surveying with any tolerable vigor, I shall earn more than

the amount of my salary from the Board. I write now to enquire whether I shall be required to pay over any such surplus of what I may receive, into the funds of the Board, or whether I will be allowed to appropriate it to the use of my own family. Your letter to our mission, which brought us together at our last General Meeting evidently contemplated a liberal policy, to the end, that the members of our mission might adopt such measures as would enable them, in time to withdraw from their connection with the Board.

I hope I shall be able to resume my appropriate missionary work after taking vigorous exercise for a year, & I shall probably do as much preaching during that time as I now do.

I should be glad to hear the views of the Prudential Committee as soon as practicable – Will you please write to me via San Francisco, in which case I may receive your letter next June or July.

Very truly yours
W. P. Alexander

Rev. Wm. P. Alexander.

Honolulu, Nov. 17, 1849

Rec'd April 5, 1850

Ackd. May

7

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Sec. of A.B.C.F.M.
&c &c &c
Missionary House
Boston
Mass.

SHIP

NEW BEDFORD MS.
APR 4

Copy of Letter sent on the Montreal around Cape Horn.

Honolulu Nov 17th 1849

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

I wrote to you last week, giving some account of the destination, prospects &c of my eldest son William DeWitt, who sails on the Montreal for N. Bedford, in the large company who expect to leave the Islands today. I also spoke of my health & of the probable necessity of engaging in some active employment for a few months or a year.

The Government here are laboring to dissolve the old feudal system & give the people allodial titles to their lands: for this purpose it will be necessary that the lands be surveyed. I have thought that the work of surveying might afford the very exercise that I need, & thus enable me to recruit my health in performing a valuable work for the nation, and meanwhile support my family without any expense to the Board. All the brethren, whom I have been able to consult, advise me to adopt this course, so soon as the Seminary at Lahainaluna can spare me. Several months will doubtless elapse before a helper can be obtained & in readiness to take

the charge of the school.

It is probable, that if I am able to prosecute the work of surveying with any tolerable vigor, I shall earn more than the amount of my salary from the Board. I write now to enquire whether I shall be required to pay over, into the funds of the Board, any such surplus that I may receive; or whether I will be allowed to appropriate it to the use of my own family.

Your letter to our mission, which brought us together at our last General meeting, evidently contemplated a liberal policy, to the end that the members of our mission might adopt such measures as would enable them in time to withdraw from their connection with the Board, & get their support here among the people.

I hope I shall be able to resume my appropriate Missionary work, after taking vigorous exercise for a year, & I shall probably do as much missionary work during that period as I now do.

I should be glad to hear the views of the Prudential Committee as soon as practicable, will you therefore please write to me immediately via San-Francisco, & thus oblige Yours very truly

W. P. Alexander

Nov 20 /49

Dear Brother

The Montreal sailed yesterday taking ~~so~~ many dear to our hearts.

Your letter of last Aug has also come to hand - We rejoice to hear you are so nearly restored to health.

I will send this copy of what I wrote you by the Montreal, the short route via San Francisco, in order that I may get an early reply -

The missionary passengers on the Montreal are Mrs Richards & two daughters - two daughters of Mrs Chamberlain viz Maria Jane & Martha Ann, and Ann Eliza Clark. Mr Paris & his two daughters. Mr C. B. Andrews & David Hitchcock. Alvah Clark & my son Wm DeWitt. 13 in all -

Three missionary sons have recently reached the islands viz. Asa Thurston, Henry Whitney & Saml. Ruggles. The latter in poor health -

As ever yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. Wm. P. Alexander,

Honolulu Nov. 17. 1849.

Recd. March 11. 1850.

ansd. March 22

For Prud. Com.

missionary children returned to the Islands

Rev R. Anderson

Missionary House

Pemberton Square

Boston

Mass

U. S. A.

40

SAN [illegible]
JAN
14

Children ret. to the Islands.

Kaupakalua Hikina East Maui
March 21st 1850

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother,

I am here on a surveying excursion caught in a storm & hence cannot prosecute my work. I will therefore write you what I intended to have written before I set out from Lahainaluna on this excursion.

Some time in Nov. last I wrote you, intimating that such was the state of my health, that the brethren generally advised me to lay aside the work of teaching, for a season, and engage in active exercise, hoping thus to get my health restored. Last month I was brought low by an attack of fever, from which I am not yet entirely recovered. After an ineffectual effort to get some one to remove to Lahainaluna and carry on the school, I have been compelled to disband it for the present, hoping to be able to resume my post there in the course of a year, with youth renewed by active exercise. I have left my excellent native assistant, L. S. Ua, there in charge of the land and school property, & under his charge some twenty pupils to aid him in his work, these he will instruct daily.

My letter of Nov. last, sent by the Montreal, and also via San Francisco, communicated some proposals to you relative to the avails of my labors &c. during this year. Some of the brethren whom I have consulted are of the opinion that your system of operations will not allow you to grant my request, while I remain in connection with the Board, and advise me, as the least embarrassing course, to ask for a dismission according to the seventh Resolution of the Prudential Committee contained in your letter of July 19. 1848.

After much reflection and consultation, Mrs. Alexander and I have arrived at the conclusion that this advice is good.

We therefore do hereby request a release from our connection with the A. B. C. F. M. on the basis of the seventh Resolution adopted by the Prud. Committee July 18th. 1848. We also request that this release take effect from June 1st. 1849. We have drawn nothing from the funds of the Board since the first day of June 1849, the Hawaiian Government having paid my salary during the year as teacher of the Seminary at Lahainaluna. By fixing this date for my release the mission will be saved from the trouble of settling any questions relative to the avails of a few surveying excursions, I made during the year.

The Seminary and all its appurtenances having been made over to the Hawaiian Government, the Board cannot give me my dwelling house on the terms proposed. The Board do however own a dwelling house in Lahaina, which is now rented to a merchant, it is the house built by the late Mr. Richards formerly of our mission and long occupied by him. This house is not needed now for any family in connection with the Board. I therefore request ~~that~~ you give me this house and premises and my proportional part of the mission Herd at Lahainaluna, in which herd there are some 50 or 60 cattle old and young. Then if through the failure of my health I should be compelled to leave my post in the Government school, I would still have a home for my family, and that home in a dry climate suited to my infirmities. This would be showing me such favor only as you propose to show to other members of the mission, & you would no longer be subjected to the care and responsibility of disposing of and keeping in repair an unoccupied house.

After having been connected with the Board almost twenty years, having had our wants all supplied without care on our part, having also passed the vigor of youth and feeling enfeebling old age creeping upon us, it is

not without apprehensions that we have ventured to ask the dissolution of this connection. We do it however, as children, who go out from their father's house into the active business of life, feeling that if calamity overtake us we may return again to the old homestead, where we shall receive a hearty welcome back to the paternal roof. Or should I leave my wife a widow and my children fatherless & should they need your assistance, I doubt not they would obtain it as readily as though I had died in connection with the Board

Before I close this letter I wish to say a word respecting the Wailuku Seminary. I perceive from your letter of Sep 18th 1849 that the Committee are misinformed in several respects in regard to this Seminary.

The Lands given by the Government to this institution (, some 40 acres,) were given on the express condition that a boarding school be sustained for girls, that school having been abolished, the land, as a matter of course, reverts to the Government; the Board therefore have no right in these lands to confer on any body.

In regard to other property of that school, quoting from statistics in your possession, you speak of "forty horses & mules worth $500"!! Now in fact

only one horse has ever been owned at Wailuku as mission property & no mule, and that horse has recently been purchased by Mr. Bailey and is now his private property.
You also rehearse items, which you say you derive from "another source" which makes us smile who know the facts of the case. The carpenter's shop, the corn & flour mills & lathe turned by water! I regret you do not visit us & get acquainted with our affairs. You would find a carpenter's shop connected with every missionary station in the islands, furnished variously according to the taste of the missionary. Mr. Baily has a mechanical turn of mind and he has collected together some things in the mechanic's department & he is the private owner of most of the articles in his shop. The coffee mills, which you term corn & flour mills, are his private property & pretty well worn out in the service of his brethren. He has constructed a water wheel, with which he can grind his axe, saw a board or grind his corn or arrowroot. In regard to the carts, I believe one of them has been purchased by Mr. Conde & is now his private property and the other is nearly worn out.
When the subject was before the mission I expressed my views fully & freely & when the mission adjourned, the Trustees met and appointed me to express their views to the

Board. I wrote you May 14th 1849, soon after the mission adjourned, and expressed, I believe, the opinion of all the Trustees except Mr Conde, who seemed to fancy that whatever favor you might confer on Mr Baily would be so much taken from what he might hope to receive for himself.

The only property connected with the school that any of us, except Mr Conde, hesitated about recommending to the Board to give to Mr Baily, in case he would ask for a release from his connection with the Board, was the Seminary Buildings. I do not feel clear now as to how they ought to be disposed of. I will however endeavor to present the case to you as it strikes my own mind.

1. The Board cannot sell them. This would oust Mr Baily and Miss Ogden from their dwellings. These buildings are so connected with their dwellings, Miss Ogden's being in the heart of the main buildings, that their residence might thereby be rendered intolerable.

2. For a like reason these buildings cannot be employed by the Board for the purposes for which they were erected by other agents than Mr Baily and Miss Ogden, while they occupy their present posts, for unless they have the control of the establishment they might be so annoyed that they would rather retire to a hut than live in their houses.

3. The Board may continue to own the buildings and keep them in repair at an expense of three or four hundred dollars per annum, & allow Mr Baily and Miss Ogden the free use of them in prosecuting their labors. Mr Baily could not afford to keep them in repair as they now stand for the use of them: it would be better economy for him to build a house of his own that would accommodate his school as now modeled. or

4. The Board may give the Buildings to Mr Baily, as I recommended in my letter of May 14th 1849, reserving the right to Miss Ogden of whatever portion of them she may need for her boarding establishment of young misses. Then Mr Baily could, at his discretion, pull down a part of the buildings to keep the remainder in repair. This last course is, I think, the best the Board can adopt.

I understand that Mr Baily is about to ask for a release from his connection with the Board on the Basis of the 7th Resolution. His new school is in a flourishing condition. I attended his examination last week & was rejoiced that the school had been remodeled. The pupils & their parents appeared greatly interested, and I have no doubt but he will be able to do good and dwell in the land.

Miss Ogden too, I understand, contemplates asking a release from her connection with the Board. She has now several sweet little boarders,

two of them orphans, whose father is in California, and able to support them. She now uses a part of the Seminary buildings for their accommodation & she will continue to need the same. I was delighted to see her so happy in her new maternal duties. She and Mr Bailey are, I think, the only agents you can employ to use these Seminary buildings in such manner that they shall in some sort accomplish the object of their erection. In so great a revolution as our mission is undergoing, it can not be otherwise than that there shall be some sacrifice of property.

The Lord guide you and us, that we may be able to choose the best course in these new missionary matters is the prayer

Yours truly in the gospel
W. P. Alexander

P. S. Wailuku Ap. 4, /50

I have got this far back from my tour, and Miss Ogden has brought me a note addressed to you, asking a release from her connection with the Board on the basis of the 7th Resolution, & requests me to enclose it. I do therefore send it herewith.

As ever yours
W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander
Kaupakalua March 21. 1850
Recd July 9th 1850
Ans. July 27
Per Rev. Mr. ...
Report for release

Honolulu April 14th 1850

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

I recently addressed you a letter, ~~which~~ written at Kaupakulua on Maui, in which I requested to be released from the service of the A.B.C.F.M. on the basis of the 7th Resolution adopted by the Prud. Com. July 18. 1848. In that letter I requested that the Board give me the Richards House & premises in Lahaina, inasmuch as they own no houses at my station at Lahainaluna. I have since been employed to survey the premises connected with the Lahaina Station, & the thought has occured to me that it would not be uninteresting to the Committee, when acting on the subject to have a plot of them & some description of the several particulars. As two of the kalo lands are not contiguous to the yards in which the dwelling houses stand, nor to each other, I have given you the plot of them in three several groups

No. 3 contains the dwelling houses & yards, the Chapin lot & about 2¼ acres of kalo land.

I believe the Secular agents have sold the chapin lot to Mr Baldwin for $200.00.

No. 1. contains just one acre of kalo land, & was in olden times called an Apanalele of Haleu, i.e. a Separate portion of Haleu & was owned by whoever possessed the kalo land of No 3.

No. 2. contains one acre three roods & five poles of kalo land, is called Opaeula.

These lands will probably be awarded to the A.B.C.F.M. by the Board of Land Commissioners.

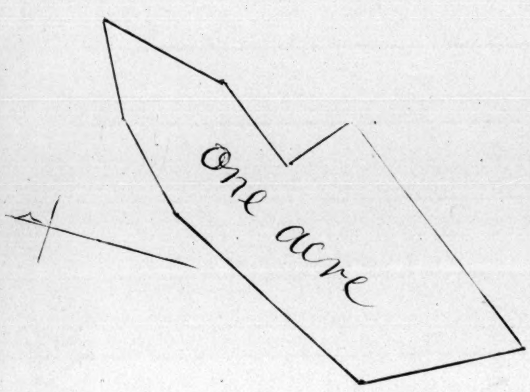
Before closing this note I wish to ask of you the favor to send me the Elements of Trigonometry by J. R. ~~Williams~~ Young, revised by J. D. Williams: also Mathematical Tables by Babbage, the latest edition
do do Hutton " "

And a <u>circular protractor</u>

As ever yours

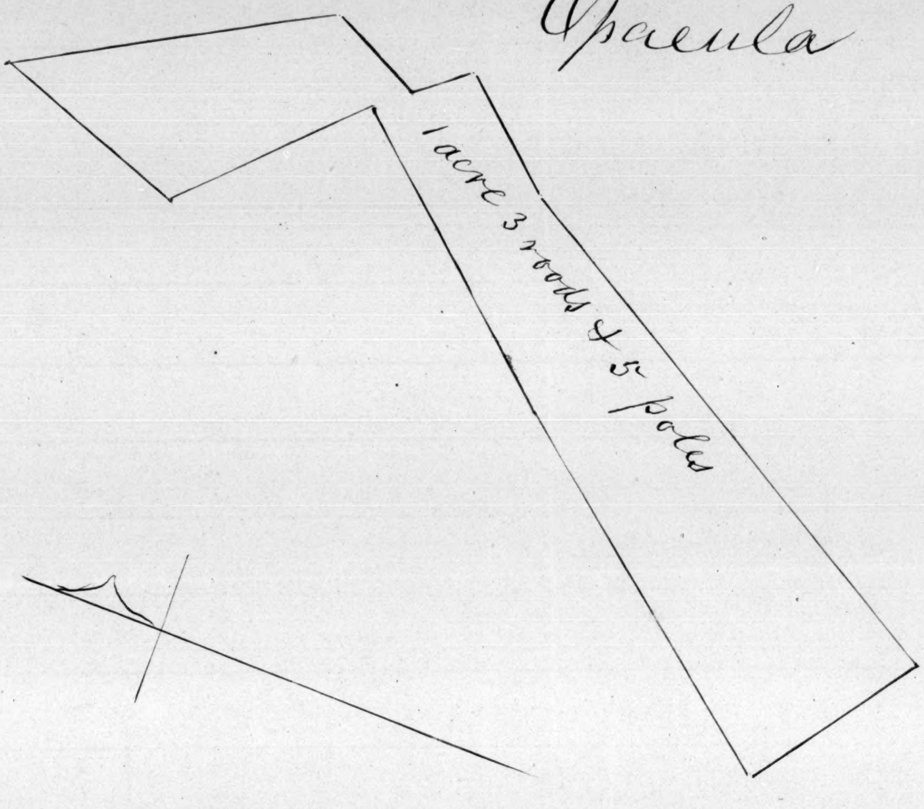
W. P. Alexander.

Apanalele of Haleu



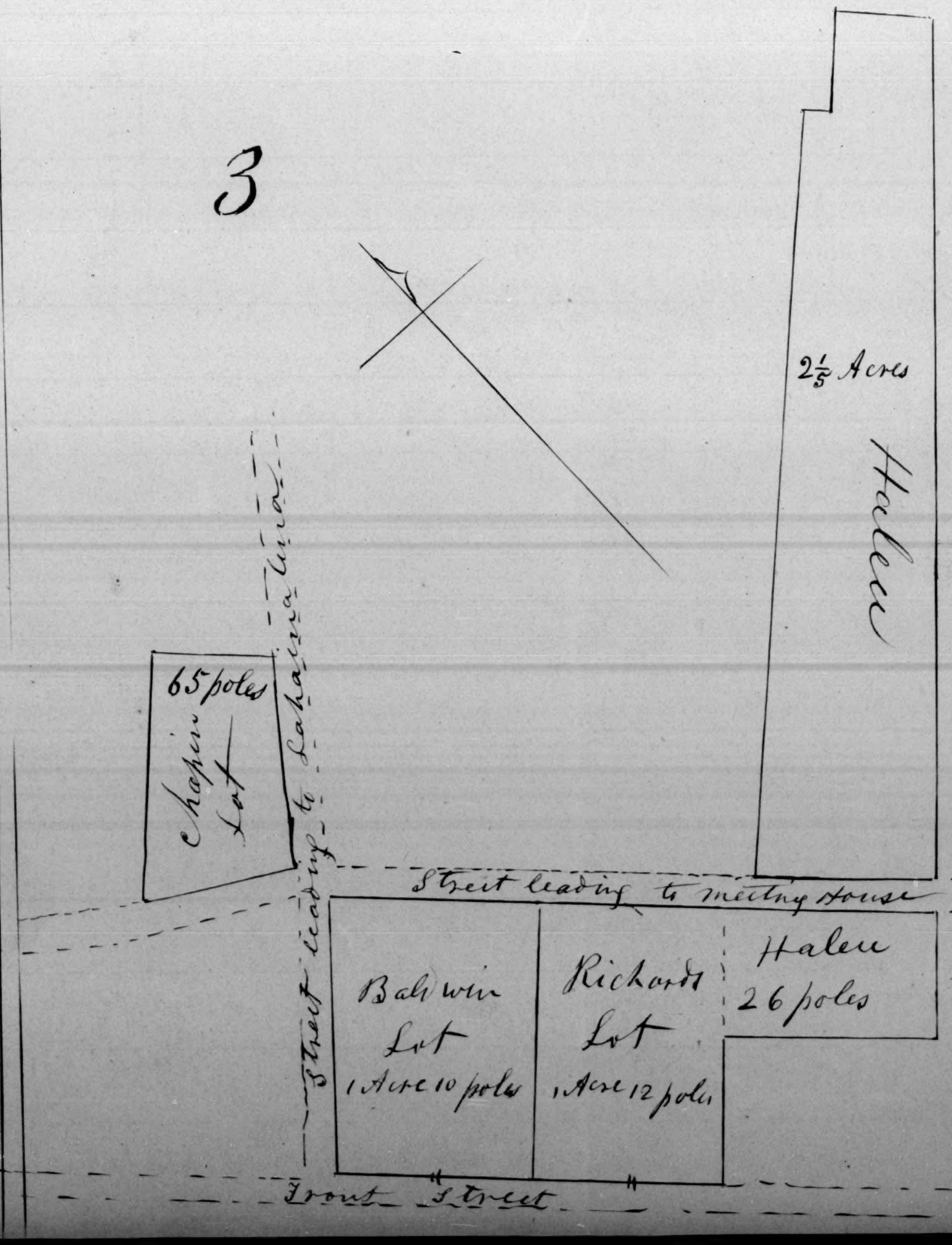
1

Opaeula



2

3



Rev. W. P. Alexander
Honolulu April 14. 1850
Rec^d. July 9. 1850

Ans^d. July 27.

Requests

Richards's house at
Lahaina &c

Plan of the Ground.

Lahainaluna Nov 6th 1850

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

My dear Brother

Your letter of March 22d came to hand some time in last June, and has not been acknowledged, as I was waiting for a reply to a letter I wrote you the 21st of March, asking for a release from my connection with the A. B. C. F. M. This reply from you of July 27th has just come to hand.

If your letter of March 22d had been before me when I last wrote, I would not then have asked for a release, as that letter authorised me to take a furlough (as it were) for a year, for the purpose of recruiting my health in active exercise, assume the responsibility for the support of myself & family for that time & regard as my private property whatever compensation, I might receive for my services. As far as I had opportunity, I consulted the members of the mission & they all approved of my engaging in that work. Considering myself therefore now as being on this furlough, I withdraw my request to have my release antedated.

Believing however that in prosecuting my labors hereafter in the Seminary, I shall not need the funds of the Board, I do hereby renew my request for a release from my connection with the A. B. C. F. M. on the

basis of the seventh Resolution, adopted by the Prudential Committee July 10th 1848.

In supposing that I asked for a division of the Lahaina Herd, you were mistaken. It was for my proportion of the Herd of Lahaina<u>luna</u> that I asked. The herds of Lahainaluna & Lahaina are as distinct as those of any other stations in our field.

The herd of Lahainaluna was not included in the transfer of the mission to the Hawaiian Govt., which consisted of the lands, buildings, apparatus & Library. I renew this request & also that the Board grant me the house at Lahaina built by Mr. Richards & its premises, in the same manner as they propose to give house & its appertenances &c to a missionary who sends a written request for a full release from his connection with the Board. So long as I have health to labor I expect the Govt. will furnish me a house to live in, but if my connection with the school were dissolved & I should assume the care of some congregation, then the possession of a house in Lahaina would secure me a dwelling, as its rent would enable me to procure one wherever my field might be, & if I should be called away by death my family would have a home. These are the reasons

why I make this request & I presume they will commend themselves to the committee as well founded. This request however is not made as a condition on which I ask for a release; for if the Committee cannot see their way clear to grant me the house, I would still ask for my release.

Your letter of July 21st to the mission in regard to the relations sustained by the Board to released missionaries is very satisfactory.

At another time I will write to you respecting the prospects of the Seminary here, and also in regard to the new mission you propose to other Polynesian Islands.

I will enclose this letter unsealed, for their perusal, to Messrs Clark, Castle & Emerson, that they may have an opportunity to write you their opinion of my propositions.

As ever most truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander,

Lahainaluna, Nov. 6, 1850.

Recd. Feb. 10, 1851.

Ans. Feb. 14/51.

Request for return [illegible]

For Rel. [illegible]

Honolulu June 6th 1851

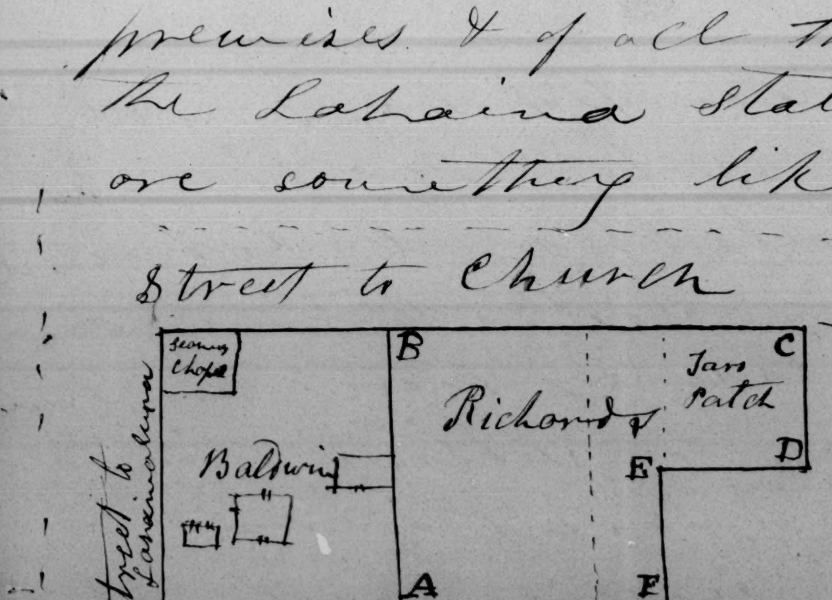
Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

Your letter of Feb 14th 1851 was received more than a month ago. I thank you for replying to my last so promptly, as by so doing your letter came to hand in time for our Genl. Meeting.

You will see by a report from the mission that I have applied for the purchase of the Richards house and premises for which I offer the sum of two thousand & five hundred dollars, on which sum I will pay the lawful interest of 12 per cent until I may be able to pay it. The brethren were of opinion that what I offer was reasonable, but the vote to recommend the case to the Pru. Com. was not unanimous, in consequence of Br Baldwin's objections.

When I first made application for this house, I sent you a plot of the premises & of all the lands connected with the Lahaina station. The house lots are something like the following.



My application is for the premises contained in the figure ABCDEF which contains about 1½ acres

I was not a little surprised at Br. Baldwin's objection to my request on the ground that he needed the single taro patch, which it embraces, to furnish food for his table; as he has all that were held by Messrs. Richards & Stewart who were favorites with the old chiefs & have left more taro land at the Lahaina station than is connected with any other station in our field. I shall esteem it a favor if the Board will sell me this house & premises as proposed. Br. Castle who will carry this will be able to make any explanations you may desire.

My situation at present is very precarious. A change in the Govt. may dissolve my connection with the Seminary at Lahainaluna, or my health, which is still, feeble! ~~precarious~~, may require me to resign. Besides it is pleasant to a feeble broken down man to reflect that in case he is suddenly removed by death, he has a home provided for his family.

You will rejoice to hear that the school will soon be resumed, as Br. Pogue has be removed from Kealakekua to Lahainaluna & I think he is a first rate man for the post. The Legislature moreover have voted the sum of $6000 to sustain the institution for the present year. I hope therefore the engine will soon be in full blast.

Today we have brought our Genl. Meeting to a close. The meeting has been harmonious & many matters of serious import to the mission & to the Hawaiian nation have come under review. I felt during the meeting that the corresponding members were too much restricted in their powers. In regard to the change in the Deposetory, in regard to the Punahou school, in regard to the new mission in Micronesia and many other subjects that come before us, the corresponding members had quite as deep an interest as the brethren who have a full connection with the Board. I would suggest therefore an enlargement of our powers that we may feel the importance of continuing to attend the general meetings.

The Mission Press & the Punahou school are the two most important points of common interest that remain. I do not believe that Mr. Rogers will be able to support himself by printing for the Hawaiians. In fact he is illy adapted to walk alone. I feel oppressed in view of the Punahou school being so large a bill of expense to the Board. The parents cannot sustain it with their present means. We need to have it endowed from the U.S. & that will give it stability. The trustees will lay this matter before you by the hand of br Castle.

It is nearly four weeks since I left my family at Lahainaluna to come and attend Genl. meeting – They were well when I last heard from them. My Eldest son is now in Yale College & I hope he will become a comfort to his parents & a blessing to the churches – Most truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander,
Honolulu, June 6, 1851.
Recd. Aug. 23, 1851.

Ans. April 13th
Sept. 23.

Enlargement of Conf. Mem.
Pacey –
P. Com.

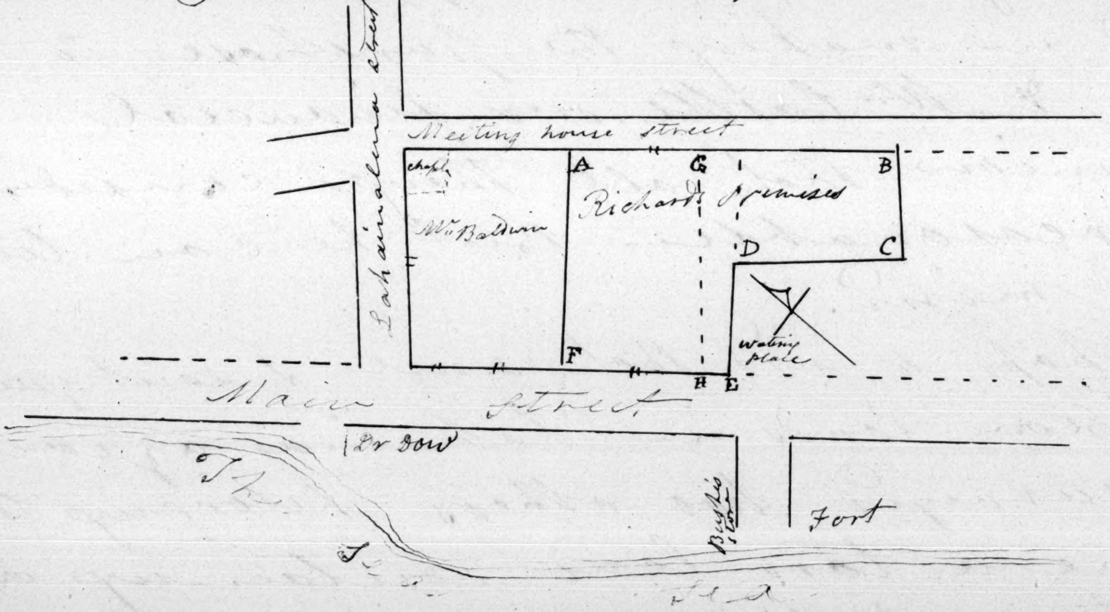
Lahaina Home

Lahainaluna June 17th 1851

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

I promised the brethren at Genl. Meeting that I would send you an accurate survey of the Richards' premises in Lahaina, which I propose to purchase, concerning which I wrote you last week by Mr. Castle.



Areas of the several parts	
Mr. Baldwins lot	1.00 Acre
The Lot FG	0.84 "
" " GH	0.27 "
Taro patch DB	0.55 "

In the above plot, the figure A.B.C.D.E.F represents the Richards premises. The notes of the survey are as follows, viz-

Beginning at the north corner of this lot adjoining Mr. Baldwin's house lot & the meetinghouse street, and running

S 45½° E 5.67 chains along the Meetinghouse street — Thence
S 43° W 1.96 chains along lot of Kuakamauna — Thence
N 44° W 2.89 chs. along Lot of Naholelua — Thence
S 46° W 2.03 chs. along " " — Thence
N 43½ W 2.91 chs. along Main Street to Lot of Mr. Baldwin — Thence
N 46¾ E 3.84 chs. along Lot of Mr. Baldwin to Beginning

Containing 1 67/100 Acre.

The figure BD is a taro patch. The dotted line GH is a fence erected by Mr. Baldwin just before the house was rented to Mr. Bolles, after Mr. Forbes returned to the U.S.A cutting from the yard a narrow strip GE which had always been connected with the yard in the days of Mr. Richards & Mr. Forbes. This strip of land GE ought

not to be separated from the yard; & in regard to the taro patch D B which Mr Baldwin represented as so necessary to supply his table, I would quote a remark of one of the brethren during the discussion in Genl Meeting, who said that the taro lands in the hands of Mr Baldwin properly taken care of would yield an ample supply for the tables of all the families in our mission!

These premises if sold at public auction would probably bring a larger sum than $2500 which I offer, I expected in making the purchase to receive a favor, & Mr Castle, our financial agent, was of opinion that all things considered my offer was reasonable. But he can tell you his whole mind.

I ought perhaps to add that since I sent you plots of the mission lands in Lahaina a year ago, I have surveyed two others belonging to the station, one a taro land containing a little more than half an Acre & the other a wharf lot of 90 feet along the beach & 60 feet depth.

Hoping the above statements will convey all the information, which the mission expected me to communicate

I am as ever
very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander,

Lahainaluna June 17, 1851.

Recd. Sep. 12, 1851.

Ans. Oct. 13th

Ans. ~~Oct~~. 20,

Lahainaluna lands.

described.

15

Lahainaluna Oct. 3. 1851

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear brother

David Malo has just brought me the enclosed to forward to Messrs Bingham and Ruggles - I do not know their address & therefore enclose them to you

Our school here at the Seminary is in successful operation - We have more than 70 pupils, & taken all together they are a promising set of young men, who I hope are yet to do good in Polynesia - Brother Pogue makes an excellent associate at this post & takes hold in earnest - I think he is better pleased with the work than he had anticipated - Our families are in pretty good health - I find myself able to confine myself to the work of teacher & retain a good amount of vigor beyond my expectations - I spend saturdays in surveying which I hope will help to keep me up -

As ever yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Lahainaluna, Oct. 8/57

Recd. Dec. 23, 1857

Ansd. to Mr. Castle
Mar. 23/52

Rev R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary Rooms
Boston
Mass.
U.S.A.

Paid ½ oz

Over land

ABC 19.1 v.14

Alexander, William P.

16. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 Feb. 1852
17. A.L. to R. Anderson; 21 June 1852
18. A.L. to R. Anderson; 30 Dec. 1852
19. A.L. to R. Anderson; 16 Apr. 1853
20. A.L. to R. Anderson; 16 Oct. 1836

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

ABC 19.1 v.14

Alexander, William P.

21. A.L. to Rev. L. Smith; 6 Jan. 1857
22. A.L. to R. Anderson; 26 Aug. 1857
23. A.L. to R. Anderson; 21 Sept. 1857
24. A.L. to R. Anderson; 6 Oct. 1857
25. A.L. to R. Anderson; 13 Jan. 1858
26. A.L. to R. Anderson; 26 May 1858

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

16

Lahainaluna Feb 10th 1852

Rev R. Anderson D.D.
Sec A. B. C. F. M.
Boston.

Dear Brother

I received your letter of Oct 23/51 about a month ago, but our printing wheels move so heavily, that the General Letter did not get along till last week. I have read it over twice with great care.

I think it is well that you refused my request, although it is rather mortifying to have what one esteems a reasonable request rejected. still I can see reasons why it is well. 1st You will not have occasion to feel that you have made me rich; a matter of some importance in Abraham's esteem. 2d I shall be saved from the care of troublesome property, repairing, renting & collecting rents &c &c. 3d The policy of the Board has been hereby more fully developed.

I think you overrate my pecuniary resources, as well as the value of the house & lot which I offered to purchase. Unless I had stumbled into a gold mine it would be difficult to explain how I could be so soon rich. I have had my large family to support & my services have yielded a very little more than was needed for their support.

Real estate can never be very valuable in a country whose government lacks stability. Capitalists will not risque their money in such a country. And such a country is this. We are liable to be kicked about as France pleases. I did once hope the Stars & Stripes would float over this nation, but I now despair of that. The Slave holding interest in the U.S. will not allow a free state from the Pacific Ocean to enter the Union.

The Jesuits here will not sleep, they may be expected to influence France to trouble us continually. Meanwhile the U.S. and England will speak kindly to us, but they will not go to war with France for our protection. We shall therefore continue to be trodden down under the feet of men. Men of capital will invest their money where there is more security, and these islands will be filled up with a class of foreigners, who wish to live along with as little exertions as possible, who expect very little and accomplish very little in the world.

If California & Oregon should swing off & establish a Western Republic they would probably take us in, then Real Estate here would rise.

your directions to divide the congregation of Lahaina is, I think, very unwise. The congregation is now hardly able to sustain one pastor and it is not too large a field for One.
Besides Lahaina is probably as large and flourishing as it ever will become. Its resources are very small. What are they? It has a good roadstead, good water. But the important agricultural products of Maui will not pass thro Lahaina. Those of Makawao & Hamakua will be shipped from Kahului. Those of Kula & Honuaula from Kalepolepo & Keawakapu, as the last two years have proved. Nothing but the whaling interest will keep Lahaina from going back continually. It is reasonable to expect that ~~as~~ the native race diminishes those in Lahaina will also diminish. Why then direct a geographical line to be drawn dividing the congregation.
The Home Missionary plan of the Board is now certainly very distinct. I think however it was pretty well understood before. You seem however not to have found out why Brethren are slow to ask for a release, before they can get an entire support from their people. It must be evident too that unless they do get a release on the Home Missionary plan, the period

is indefinitely future when they may be expected to apply for a release, Of all those who once were connected with the A.B.C.F.M. & have been released, only <u>one</u> is supported by his congregation that is Mr Clark. I think Lahaina could support its pastor - perhaps they would, perhaps not, It is possible that Molokai will support Mr Hitchcock, tho I consider it doubtful - Wailuku was once a flourishing garden, but it is becoming like the heath of the wilderness - I dont believe they can be relied on to support their pastor.

The question then is of some importance, why are the Brethren reluctant to ask for a release & get part of their support from the people and a part from the Board?

I have heard three reasons given -

1st It would be making a change without accomplishing any thing - Their people now do what they can & the money is put into the Board's treasury, so that in fact they are now supported partly by the people & partly by the Board.

2d It is feared that the people will promise to do more than they will execute, & that the Board will not make good to the family what they thus lose.

3. An uncertainty rests on the question what will the Board do for the widow and

orphans of Home Missionaries who die?

It has become an established principle in regard to the widow and orphans of missionaries who have fallen in the service of the Board, that the Board will provide for them. Will they also provide for those of the Home Missionary?

The force of these two last reasons is much increased by considering the principles of the Board's policy towards their missionaries in the new relations on which we have been entering, as developed during the past year. These principles might be called the principles of rigid literal interpretation. Whatever favor or privilege is found in the letter of the law will be granted; but if not found there definitely expressed, however much it may seem to accord with the spirit of the rules, will be rejected. Many things which by prescription have become the property of missionaries are not found in the laws of these new relations. Will they be granted when called for? Something definite and satisfactory on these points would remove most of the lingering hesitation that keeps brethren from asking for a release.

I have written thus freely believing you would be glad to know just how we think & feel.

Respectfully & truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Lahainaluna, Feb. 10, 1852.

Recd. Apr. 22/52.

ack. to Mr Pogue Aug 1/52

ack. Oct. 27

Remarks on the Hawn.
Missn. & plans — difficulties,
&c.

Lahainaluna June 21. 1852

Rev R. Anderson D.D.
Sec. Prud. Com. A. B. C. F. M.
Boston.

Dear Brother

I have been denied the privelege of attending the late sessions of the Mission in Gen. Meeting. I have seen however a copy of their letter in reply to those received from you during the year. I regret that they have not, in this their genl. letter, replied to several important particulars contained in yours. They probably were not agreed in regard to what they should say.

There are many things of a local nature, in reference to which, our mission is more competent to judge than the wisest Committee that could be selected in Boston. Such matters were always referred to the decision of the mission in former years. The character & condition of our people are very unlike that of the people of the U.S. so also are the duties we owe to the people different from those which ministers of the gospel are called upon to perform in the U.S. & who but those on the ground can form a correct judgement in such matters? I regret that the Prud. Com. have undertaken

to decide such matters now. It would seem that they have lost confidence in the wisdom & integrity of the mission.

About a year and a half ago I asked for and obtained a release from my connection with the A. B. C. F. M. <u>on the Basis of the Seventh Resolution</u>. Since that time I have supposed my relations to the Prud. Com. have been materially different from what they were before, that while I would always value their counsels & give them that high consideration which they deserve, I was no longer subject to their control as those supported by them; but subject to my Brethren in the Lord, as all ministers of the gospel are, like them bound to live worthy of my high vocation, in regard to which my brethren in this field are the only competent judges.

I think the Com. are unwise in assuming authority in such matters, especially in regard to corresponding members of the mission. They, who are dependent on the Board for a support, may be compelled by their necessities to submit to authority and control which they consider unreasonable & oppressive, but they "who can be free will use it rather."

It has been and still is my desire

to maintain as close and intimate a relation with the mission as possible, & I have been glad to be reconed among the Corresponding members: yet if the relation of Corresponding member involves a subjection to the Prud. Com. in Boston, then I do not desire to continue in the relation. The Rev T. E. Taylor now is just established as pastor of a new chh just organised in Honolulu and I do not suppose it would add to his usefulness to place himself under the control of the Prud Com of the Board, nor that it would any more secure him against swerving from the path of duty. I wish for no liberty but such as the cause of Christ demands that all ministers of the gospel have.

If the Com. insist on exercising this control to which I object, I apprehend it will tend to separate from the mission all the corresponding members

An old law of the Board declares that "no missionary or assistant missionary shall engage in any business or transaction for private gain." Having acted in view of this law for thirty years or more, you seem to have arrived at the notion

that the earning of money by a missionary is wicked. You insist that a missionary who does any thing besides his appropriate work of preaching or teaching, ought to do it gratuitously, otherwise the deed is vitiated. But if the laborer is worthy of his hire, why is not the work performed by a minister of the gospel as deserving of compensation as that of any other man? The great apostle of the gentiles felt it to be his duty to preach gratuitously, altho he maintained he had a right to pay, yet he did not hesitate to charge his employers for his labor in making tents to their order.

In your late letter, you take the position that surveying land is incompatible with the missionary relation. Now I have employed most of my saturdays during the past year in surveying, & I have received compensation for it. I think I have not injured my missionary influence by this work, but by it have conferred a kindness on the people, which they have received as a kindness, have improved my health and thus rendered myself more valuable as a missionary & obtained something to aid in the education of my children

Indeed I think it doubtful whether I could have held on to my post during the year without the active labor, which surveying has led me to perform.

Unless convinced that I am doing wrong, I expect, as I have opportunity, to continue the same course in time to come.

If I correctly understand the relation of a corresponding member of the mission it is one who has asked for and obtained his release on the basis of the 7th Resolution & continues his work to the satisfaction of his brethren in the field, who only are competent to judge.

If I am mistaken, please inform me that I have forfeited the privileges of a corresponding member and direct what shall be done with that portion of the Lahainaluna Herd which I hold under the Seventh Resolution.

I have written plainly & frankly hoping thus to secure a clear understanding.

With the highest respect
I remain as ever
Yours in the gospel
W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Lahainaluna, June 21, 1852

Recd. Sep. 14. 1852.

ackd. Oct. 27

ans. July 4. 1853

✓ Prud. Com.

really answered in the bulletin

letter of

Lahainaluna Dec 30 1852

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear sir Will you please forward the enclosed, & thus do a favor to a worthy man, here separated from his family, in the Eng colony?

I have just heard that Mr Castle has returned to Hon, but have not heard the result of his mission to Boston — My family are all well.

As Ever yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander
Lahainaluna Dec 30/52
Recd. Mar. 31/53
Ansd. May 13

SAN FRANCISCO 1 MAR CAL.

HONOLULU JAN 18 U.S. Postage paid

PAID

8

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Sec of A. B. C. F. M.
Missionary House
Boston
Mass.

via San Francisco

Lahainaluna Ap 16. 1833.

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

Several months have now elapsed since the return of our Bro. Castle, but I have hitherto expected in vain a reply to my letter to you of June 21st. of last year. I therefore feel somewhat embarrassed now in writing to you, as I do not know certainly in what relation I stand to the Prud Com. I have been expecting too to attend the approaching session of Gen! Meeting & shall feel embarrassed there for a like reason. I hope the letter which I have been expecting is on its way & will reach me before the opening of the sessions of Gen! Meeting. It is my purpose however to attend whether I receive a letter or not. I feel so deeply interested in some things to be arranged.

A call for missionaries from the South seas is not the least interesting matter to come before us. A few weeks ago Matunui the highest Chief of Fatuhiva, one of the Marquesas Islands, landed at Lahaina, from a Whale-ship. Two years since, the people of Fatuhiva bought a large amount of arms and ammunition from Calafornia traders with hogs, & as they wished to enjoy their property, they have been much engaged in war since that time: until they atlength feel heartily sick of war. In a general council they have deputed their King to visit the Hawaiian Islands & get them missionaries who can teach them how to live in peace. They are to await the return of their King five months, & should he not then return, they will act as though he were dead. Two months have already elapsed and one month more will roll around before the subject can be acted upon by the Hawaiian Miss'y. Society. Matunui therefore begins to feel quite uneasy. He fears he will be unable to get back against the time appointed, in which case he fears the minor chiefs will usurp the govt. and perhaps kill his children.

He looks therefore uniformly grave and sad

He has been exceedingly interested in the civilization
knowledge and attainments of the people here.
Attends the church meetings, examinations of
schools &c with great pleasure & seems ardently
intent on seeing such a state of things among
his own people.

Meanwhile we have been looking anxiously
for a field suited to Hawaiians to enter
upon as missionaries, that they may do their
part in evangelizing the world & may
thus also develope the christian graces
in their own hearts. We did hope such a
field was opened to us in Micronesia, but
we find there a people of _strange speech_
of the Chinese stock, one of the most dif-
ficult languages on the earth, & therefore
we consider that as a field inaccessable
to the Hawaiian missionary.

(God also has raised up some young men
well adapted to the work. In the class
about to graduate in the Seminary
are four, Viz _Nahinu_, _Kuala_, _Kaukau_
and _Iosepa_, who, I think are decided
Christians, good scholars for Hawaiians,
well furnished with bible knowledge,
as well instructed in theology as any of our Ha-
waiian ministers, and ardently desirous
of engaging in the good work of carrying the
gospel to the darkened pagans.)

I have laid before them the trials they may expect in Fatuhiva & they will cheerfully meet them, yea also they count not their lives dear if they may be allowed to go. They would cheerfully go, if permitted, withought any prospect of aid hereafter & cast in their lot with the Fatuhivans. This however would not be proper, they ought to be supported and encouraged in the work.

I think the Hawaiian Missionary Society ought to send them & with them perhaps one or two men of greater age who have been proved.

These young men ought to take wives with them & a vessel ought to be chartered to take them thither in about a month from this time. It would not do to put them & their wives on a whaleship, as has been suggested, to cruise about some 4 or 6 months & then land them. What would become of the wives of these young men on a whaleship!! And further the five months of Matunui would have rolled round & perhaps his people would be found engaged again in war & rapine. It will do our chhs here great good to engage in this work.

I shall therefore urge the duty of chartering a suitable vessel & sending them as soon as possible. A vessel could probably be chartered for $2.000 & we can easily raise this sum, and our chh's be the richer for it. (We need these young men in our Hawaiian field, but I think, they will do more to build up Christ's kingdom here by carrying the gospel to Fatuhiva than by remaining among us.)

For the last ten years the London Mis. Society seems to ~~have aban-doned~~ retired from the Marquesans, ~~to perish~~ and the ~~feeble~~ unsuccessful efforts they have formerly made to plant the gospel there ought not to present any obstacle in the way of the Hawaiian Christians who are of the same speech & same race, their next door neighbors, from stretching out a helping hand. That is not christian courtesy that would send off Matunui into darkness, telling him to look to London for aid.

I know the A.B.C.F.M would feel
a delicacy in sending Missionaries
~~thither~~, but the Hawaiian Chh. need
feel no such delicacy. And I
doubt not the servants of Christ
in Great Britain would rejoice
to know that the gospel was at
length proclaimed on those shores.

The providence of God, I think,
clearly calls upon us here to
send over help, in answer to
the Macedonian Cry)—

As ever yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. Wm. P. Alexander

Lahainaluna, Apr. 16, 1853

Rec'd. June 30, 1853

Ans. July 9/53

Marquesas Mission.

Aut. Haw. Miss. Soc.

Read and

Copy sent to Dr. Tidman.
July 15.

Honolulu Oct 16th 1856

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Bro,

I have just been attending a meeting of the Trustees of Oahu College & although we have appointed Mr Armstrong together with the officers of the institution to write to you the business of our meeting yet I think it may be well that individuals also write privately on the same subject.

It is evident to us that the Prest & his brother, however willing cannot long bear the burden which they now sustain; it would be out of the question for them to do it until 1858. They must have help, but no one but the president could well select this help, for various qualities & affinities are to be considered to secure the best cooperation. He therefore must go & select his faculty. He also can best select necessary books apparatus &c &c.

It is also important that he

get posted up anew on educational matters generally. We are all of opinion that the school could never be so well suspended as now & were it not that you urge us to be patient & plainly intimate that you are not yet ready to receive a visit from the President we should have decided now to suspend the school & have him go on immediately to attend go to these matters. We thought deference required that we first consult the Prud. Com. on whom we have to lean for funds.

In regard to funds I am sorry you do not aim higher $50.000 will be a very poor endowment. The amount ought to be doubled, for the College cannot go on without at least two more professors

The amount proposed in the pamphlet on Oahu College, that has just come to hand, is too small. A Professor cannot support his family & be comfortable on $1200

The salary of the President ought not be less than $2000 & that of professor not less than $1500

For several years past I have been living at Lahainaluna, where one can live some cheaper than at Punahou, & had a salary of $1500 yet I could not have supported my family on that salary, if I had not possessed other resources

To secure the services of able men, they must be made easy in regard to support.

I fully expect you will agree with us in having the Prest. visit the U.S. after the next term Indeed I think both he & his brother feel so sensibly that they are breaking down under the present burdens, that if you oppose the measure, they will both resign.

But you will hear fully on these points from other trustees.

Before I close this I will say a word about myself. You are aware that I resigned my post at the Sem'y. of Lahainaluna because my health would not allow me to continue in that post. I engaged to take charge of a grazing plantation & dairy on the Torbert plantation for 3 years, where I lived in the midst of a destitute people to whom I preached on the sabbath. The people of Wailuku now without a pastor, have very unanimously invited me to become their pastor & my employers are willing to release me, & I think it probable I shall be settled among them in a few months. I hope therefore the Prud. Com. will secure the house and premises owned by Mr Conde that I may have a place for the sole of my foot there, as the people are not able to get me a house —

I left my family all well last monday at Ulupalakua.

Very truly yours W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander
Honolulu Oct. 18
Rec'd Dec. 1856

(Copy.) 21

Wailuku Jan. 6th 1857.

Rev. L. Smith &
other members of the
Special Committee
Dear Brethren,
I have accepted the call of the church of Wailuku to become their pastor; & I have commenced occupying the house lately occupied by Mr. Conde. This I suppose the Board will purchase from Mr. Conde.

The people promise to do what they can for my support; but reasoning from the past, I cannot expect them to do much for the present. I hope the time will come, when they will support me entirely. — I do not think I can support my family on a less sum than one thousand dollars a year, togather with the use of the house.

The Church & Congregation ~~have~~ here proposed to raise for Mr. Conde $400.— a year; but I am told they did raise only $200.—

Let us hope they will raise $400.~

I shall then need a grant from the funds of the Board of $600.~

I therefore do hereby make application through you for this sum, for the year beginning the first day of the present month.

Some repairs on the house are necessary to make it comfortable. It leaks badly on the East side. Shall I proceed to make the necessary repairs at the expense of the Board?

Very truly yours in the gospel,

(Signed) W. P. Alexander.

(Copy) Rev. W. P. Alexander to Spec. Com.
Wailuku Jan. 6. 1857.
Rec'd in Boston March 30.

Wailuku Maui 26 Aug 1857

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Bro.

There are so many things I would like to write about, that I hardly know where to begin - A severe epidemic has just swept over the islands, which very few escaped & of which many died, chiefly of the aged & feeble; within three weeks, more than 30 died from Waihee to Waikapu - A death like stupor rests upon the people. Neither judgments nor mercies rouse them. A great heap of wood, hay & stubble has been gathered together here & constitutes this great church. Many of the church members, I have not yet seen, except at communions & I am told there are members who do not show themselves even then - I am taking measures to organise a band of officers similar to Methodist Class Leaders, & will divide the church into about 40 districts, having a Leader for each, & have a weekly meeting with these leaders, to hear their reports & instruct them how to act. A huge mass of professed christians, utterly indifferent about religion is a mighty obstacle to the conversion of men.

They bring forward their offerings for the support of their pastor & for foreign Missions on the first sabbath of every month. They manifested a good deal of spirit at first, but they have been declining ever since. I have now been 8 months with them and they have contributed $300 for my support & about $40 for foreign Missions. At this rate they may raise $450 a year for my support although I do not expect so much but rather that they will fall off still more.

I am living in the house occupied by Mr Conde, to which with the premises pasture & taro lands he has an allodial title, & I have no doubt he will hold on to it unless you purchase it back from him. Mr Baily has just received a letter from him saying "the Board refuse to purchase it from him & he has written to Dr Judd directing him to rent it, & that he expects to return & probably occupy it *himself*." Now I hope you will secure the house or for the people here are not able to furnish me a house & I cannot stay with them without it.

I wonder what he is coming back for! Can you not find out some way in which he can render himself generally useful in that great country? It were well to do so.

A fierce attack from various quarters has been made on our infant college, as you will see in the Advertiser & Polynesian. Some are full of bitterness, others write for amusement. Among the former you will perceive papists infidels &c who have opposed every measure by which we have aimed to advance from the beginning till now: others feel bitter because they think injustice has been done to bro Dole, we ought to have kept him & let the Beckwiths go, they say. I am persuaded we pursued the only course possible to save the institution.

There are also persons politically opposed to bro Armstrong, who transfer this hostility to the college, because bro A is a trustee & his son-in-law Prest.

It is also worthy of remark that these opposers are persons, who have never done any thing for education in the country. Give us an endowment & the institution will prosper in spite of them all.

During our late Genl. Meeting we took measures to secure a charter for our Hawaiian Missionary Society & after the charter was obtained, such of the corporate members as could meet were called together & organized. I hardly think the Prud. Com. will employ the agency of this Society in disbursing their funds.

Bro Clark was certainly the most judicious & suitable man we had for secretary, but because you in Boston <u>presumed</u> to appoint him, he was dropped. There are some in the corporation very jealous of the influence of Missionaries. Bro Armstrong can tell you all about these matters. I am glad he has gone home just now, he can explain on the spot a thousand things hard to be made plain by letters. Hurry him through his work & hurry him back again. Desperate efforts will be made to oust him during his absence.

My Eldest son Wm. DeWitt expects to enter Princeton Theol. Sem. this fall & Sam. now in Wms. College has determined to seek the gospel ministry in wh. I rejoice. My family are all well. Very truly yours.

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander
Waialua, Aug. 26. 1857.
Recd. Jan. 15.

Wailuku Sep 21. 1857

Rev R. Anderson D.D.,

Dear Bro-

It is just a week since I was on Molokai, where I had been to administer the Lord's supper, as they have no pastor. I was sorry to find they had invited Mr. Dwight to preach for them & he had complied with their invitation & that he had also told the church officers, that he would consent to become their pastor if they wished it & would cut loose from the mission & declare themselves independent. I told them our mission for good reasons had deposed Mr. Dwight from the ministry & it was very improper for them to invite him to perform any ministerial functions. They then passed a unanimous vote that they would have him preach no more. I fear evil will result from their being left vacant so long- They are still united, but divisions may arise We have no native pastor competent for the post. A very wise & energetic

man is needed & I do hope you will send out one without delay. Brother Hitchcock was a noble missionary. His whole soul was in his work & he has performed a great work there during the past quarter of a century. Let not the good work be marred by tardiness in sending his successor & send one adapted to the post. Bro Armstrong, now with you, is very familiar with matters on Molokai & can tell you what is needed.

Mrs Hitchcock is still on Molokai in very feeble health, but she may last a good while yet. She loves the work in which she has spent most of her life, is much beloved & revered by the people, is consulted by them on all important matters & exerts a great influence over them for good.

I wrote you by the last mail & have nothing specially new to tell about my field. There has been a great increase in the congregation since I appointed class leaders. all

over the field & I hope good will result from getting the people out to hear the gospel –

I hope you will be sure to secure the house, I occupy, from Mr. Conde so that I shall not be liable to be ousted by him.

We are all in good health at the station – Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Wailuku, Sep. 21. 1857.

Rec'd. Dec. 1.

ans^d [illegible]

Write to Mr. Forbes

Wailuku Oct 6th 1857

R. Anderson D.D.
Sec. of A.B.C.F.M.
&c &c &c

Dear Brother
I enclose to you a note just received from Dr Judd agent for Rev D. T. Conde, that you may see the precarious position I occupy at Wailuku.
I do not expect to get from the people, for whom I labor, more than four or five hundred dollars per annum, until they increase in wealth & in piety; & unless the Board will both furnish me a house & help the people support me, I shall not be able to hold on to my post. I have taken it for granted that the Board would afford this aid & I still expect it. I do not know why you do not purchase the premises & house from Mr Conde. You could not procure other premises & erect another dwelling for the sum for which he offers to sell -

I wrote you on this subject not very long since, having seen a letter from Mr. Conde to Mr. Baily of like import with that he has written to Dr. Judd. And I hope before this reaches you, the whole matter will be so arranged, that I may go on with my work freed from this anxiety.

Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Wailuku Oct. 6. 1857.

Rec'd. Dec. 29.

Ans'd Jan 1/58.

Prud. Com.

Code

Wailuku 13 Jan. 1858

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

Your Genl. Letter of Oct 22 has just come to hand & although I have nothing special to communicate, yet I wish to say I am exceedingly pleased to find the Board has determined to do their business out here through the Evangelical Association & not through the Hawaiian Missionary Society. I think the arrangement will give universal satisfaction

I wrote to you in July and again in September after having visited the church of Molokai. I am glad to hear you have found a missionary for Molokai. For various reasons a man, who has wisdom, discretion & force of character, is needed. Mr Dwight has a good deal of influence with the people, some of them indeed wish him for their pastor, & I fear he will hinder the usefulness of our missionary when he arrives: but we have evil influences to encounter every where, & I hope Anderson Forbes will be able to carry forward the good work begun by our brother Hitchcock successfully. I regret he is not ready to enter immediately on his work, the people have been so long without a pastor.

We were greatly surprised last week by the arrival of our son Wm. L. and although we were overjoyed to meet him again yet I felt some regret that he had come before finishing a course of theological study. I trust however his steps have been ordered by the Lord. Next week he will commence his duties as instructor at Punahou. I hear 75 pupils are expected to assemble; and although the institution must continue for a time only a preparatory school, yet I hope ere long to see it a veritable college, however some may deride and oppose it.

My son Jas. now Senior in Wms. College seems fully determined to devote himself to the missionary work.

I have been requested to go on the Morning Star, when she returns from Micronesia, to visit the brethren in the Marquesas islands, but I felt obliged to decline; because I have just made a fresh beginning in setting things in order here & it would be a great waste of labor to leave my post now. I find a huge mass of wood hay & stubble accumulated in the ch, which by the power of truth & the exercise of discipline

must be cleared away before I can expect much good to result from my labors.

I have reason to think my predecessor admitted many to the church for the purpose of getting popularity among the people. Many who were admitted by him have absented themselves from the sanctuary ever since. I now have organised a set of helpers like methodist class leaders, with whose assistance I hope to remove much of this rubbish.

Bro Bailey sailed for Honolulu this morning where he expects to embark on board the whaleship India for the U. S. His health has run down his nervous system greatly shattered by the intolerable friction he has suffered from Mr Conde during years past. He has lately had an attack of fever from which he has just arisen. I hope a visit to his friends and a winter in the U. S. will restore ~~him~~. He is a most excellent man & his wife one of the best women in the world.

I am glad the Fort st Church have got rid of Mr Strong. He was utterly unsuited for the post. I trust the Lord will now give them a pastor after his own heart.

In former letters I have written to you respecting the house I occupy, to which Mr. Conde has a fee simple title, & I suppose the Special Committee have also written to you.

I think it probable that if the terms on which he holds it were laid before a court of chancery, his title would be annulled. I however have no idea that Mr. Conde will give up his title unless compelled by law. It is highly important that the house be secured for me as there is no other in all this region that could be had. I doubt not you will know what measures to pursue to secure this end.

I have great reason to be thankful that all my family are in the enjoyment of good health. The active exercise called for in my parochial duties is very favorable to my health & I may be allowed to work on for some time yet.

Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander
Wailuku Jan. 13, 1858.
Rec'd. March 16.

Conde

 Honolulu 26 May 1858

R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

The last mail brought me two letters from you dated March 8 & 18th instructing me in regard to Mr. Conde's claim to house & premises at Wailuku. I have copied on the 1st page of this sheet a note received from Mr. Conde's agent & my reply to the same.

We are having a very pleasant genl. meeting. I do hope the cloud of blessings that is watering the American chhs. will also pour down a shower on us in the isles of Hawaii. We have rarely had so full an attendance. All are here, except Rowell of Kauai, W. O. Baldwin of Maui & Bond & Whitmore of Hawaii.

Many things I would like to write I must defer till another time, as we are so fully occupied now with Genl. Meeting & the mail will be closed on the 31st.

Very truly yours in the gospel

W. P. Alexander

ABC 19.1 v.14

27. Judd, G.P. A.L. to W. Alexander; 20 May 1858
28. A.L. to R. Anderson; 17 June 1858
29. A.L. to R. Anderson; 25 Oct. 1858
30. Hildebrand, Wm. A.D. Concerning the health of Mrs. M. Alexander; 30 Nov. 1858

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Copy - 27 Honolulu May 20 1858

"Rev W. P. Alexander

Sir

I have this day received from Rev D. T. Conde of Schenectady N. York fresh instructions to collect rent from you for the use of his house & grounds at Wailuku.

Please inform me what I can depend on, in order that I may advise Mr C. by the return mail for Fanny Major, and oblige

Your obedient Servant

G. P. Judd

agt for D. T. Conde"

Copy of reply

Honolulu May 22. 1858

G. P. Judd Esq

Sir

Your favor of the 20th inst. came to hand this morning, asking for rent for the use of a certain house claimed by Mr Conde.

In reply, I would inform you that the deed to Mr Conde of said house and grounds was given under a mistake & his claim to the property at Wailuku cannot be admitted. Of course he has no

claim for rent.

Your obedient Servant

W. P. Alexander."

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Honolulu May 26, 1858

Rec'd. July 28.

Ackd.

Wailuku 17 June 1858

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Bro.

You have probably been apprized of the fact that the Trustees of Oahu College have designated me to go to the U.S. on their behalf, to seek after funds to endow our college, when the proper time shall arrive.

It would be extremely pleasant to me to revisit that good land from which I have been absent nearly 27 years. Yet I shrink from the work proposed for me. I could visit individuals & solicit their aid, but I have a very poor gift at public speaking & should like to do the work with as little notoriety as possible.

The wonderful work of grace in the U.S. Churches, which every mail tells us of, must have the effect to open a great many hearts & purses, & I should expect every object of christian enterprise would be accelerated,

We do not expect to hear the call from Boston to go on & renew the work of collecting the funds, for several months to come. And after so long a residence in the tropics it would not be safe for me to set out from the islands at a time that have me reach the U.S. in the winter. It seems to me therefore, that I ought not to get there before next May. Then if I should go via Cape Horn I might sail in Jan. & if across the Isthmus in March. I shall expect to make the best provision I can for my children here at the islands & take Mrs. Alexander with me, concerning which the Special Com. have written you.

I would much rather go across the Isthmus if the expense were not so great, perhaps it may become cheaper before next March.

I think it very desirable that the matter in regard to this house & premises with Mr. Conde be settled before I go. Mr. Conde may instruct Dr. Judd to sue me & thus matter

the settlement. If he does not, would it not be well for your agents here to institute a suit for the purpose of annulling Mr. Conde's title? Dr. Judd said to me lately "You have an important advantage, from the fact that you are in actual possession, but if you go to the U. S. I will seize the House for Mr. Conde"

Being Kahukula, I attend an examination of all the schools in this district today & tomorrow. The schools are flourishing. Next week we have a protracted meeting when I hope a blessing will descend upon us.

Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Wm. P. Alexander
Wailuku June 1st 1858.
Ans'd Aug. 11.

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Wailuku June 17. 1858.

Rec^d Aug. 14.

ans^d Aug. 28th

Coming home

& Prud. Com.

 Wailuku Oct 25th 1858

Rev R. Anderson D.D.
Mission-ary House Boston
Dear Brother

Your favor of Aug 28th came to hand yesterday. I heartily concur in the opinion that we had better seek a passage via Cape Horn in some clipper. I should rather not sail before Jan or Feb if any opportunity should offer in either of those months. I feel in a strait in reference to getting some one to supply my place during my absence. S. M. Kamakau, who for many years was an assistant teacher at Lahainaluna, & who has since held various high offices of Govt. as local & circuit Judge, Land-commissioner, Member of Parliament &c &c was cut off from our church last March for perjury. I understand he has joined the Catholics & now he will do all the mischief that his spite & education & talents will enable him to do. We have no reserve corps in our Missionary army to come forward & take one's post at such a time. Perhaps one of our very feeble old men

father Bishop or father Gulick might be persuaded to come & hold the helm for a year. I have written to bro Clark suggesting such a measure. I wish bro Bailey were back again at home, his presence would greatly relieve the matter. But I suppose we are not to expect him till next spring.

A few weeks ago I accompanied our young brother Rev A. O. Forbes to Molokai to introduce him to the people of his charge. They received him with a good deal of enthusiasm & engaged to raise him a salary of $800.00 per annum, beginning with Jan 1st 1859.

He is a noble young man, rather an improvement on the original stock. & I hope he will find one of the daughters of his native land ready to say "Where thou goest, I will go." He has already a pretty good command of the Hawaiian tongue. He made an address of 10 minutes on sabbath to the great congregation that was perfectly intelligible & the low enthusiastic murmur

of gratulation that rolled over the assembly was very interesting. Mrs Hitchcock has offered to board him till he can build a house & get ready to keep house himself. I am glad to be able to inform you that Edward Hitchcock who has run a wild course, has turned about in good earnest & I hope is now a sincere disciple seated at the feet of Jesus. I had feared he would be an obstacle to the usefulness of our young brother. Now I trust he will be a helper. Harvey Rogers too, who had well nigh gone to ruin at Honolulu seems to be seeking the Lord in good earnest. Bless the Lord oh my soul & forget not all his benefits.

All hearts throughout the islands throbbed with one great emotion at the news of the Atlantic Telegraph. Even the natives join in the enthusiasm when they hear that the wild lightning of the skies has been caught & tamed & pressed into the service of man as a swift bearer of despatches.

This event was celebrated by a magnificent comet that has been blazing in our western horizon after sunset during the month past, moving from North to South. At one time its tail exceeded 30° in length.

You will learn that the Treaty with the French has been perpetrated. This poor little nation can enjoy no independence. But the Lord reigns & blessed be his name.

My family at home is very small we have only Charles Hodge & Ellen Charlotte at home with us. We are all in pretty good health. Six of our children are at Punahou, three sons, one of them professor, & three daughters, all doing well.

Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

P. S. Mrs Bailey & family are all well. Mrs Green wife of bro Jon. S. Green of Makawao is failing both in body & mind & will not probably be long with us —

P.S. On the 8th of April last I wrote to Mr Gordon the Treasurer, telling him the good people of Waikapu, a part of my parish, had erected a good substantial stone meetinghouse & had determined to get a church bell, to call the forgetful to meeting. For this purpose they had paid $100.00 into my hands. I requested him to send me a church bell with the necessary fixtures, that would weigh about 150 lbs & I would pay over the money to Messrs Castle & Cooke or to whomsoever he might direct. Fearing the letter had miscarried, I wrote to him again about 2 months ago & I now add this note to secure if possible the sending of the bell, for the people are waiting with eager expectation.

W. P. A.

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Wailuku, Oct. 25, 183[illegible]

Rec'd. Dec. 30.

Ack March 9

Mr [illegible]

30

This is to certify that I have of late been attending on Miss Mary Alexander professionally, and that I find her state of health such, that I consider a long sea-voyage to be the best means of restoring it.

Honolulu November 30. 1858. Wm. Hillebrand M.D.

Dr. Wm Hildebrand

Honolulu Nov. 30. 1858.

Rec'd. Feb. 14. 1859.

Respecting Mr. Alexander.

Certificate
of
Physician.

ABC 19.1 v.14

31. Alexander, W.P. A.L. to R. Ander--
son; telegram; 2 May 1859
32. A.L. to R. Anderson; 2 May 1859
33. Alexander, W.P. A.L. to R. Ander-
son; 3 May 1859
34. A.L. to R. Anderson; 15 Aug. 1859

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Electric Marine Telegraphs,

COMPRISING THE FOLLOWING LINES:

CAPE ANN, CAPE COD, CAPE COD MARINE, COMMERCIAL AND PALMER'S, HULL, COHASSET AND SCITUATE.

EXTENDING FROM

BOSTON TO GLOUCESTER, PROVINCETOWN, PLYMOUTH, NEW BEDFORD, AND ALL STATIONS UPON CAPE ANN, CAPE COD, MARTHA'S VINEYARD, NANTUCKET AND SOUTH SHORE,

AND CONNECTING WITH ALL LINES IN THE UNITED STATES AND BRITISH PROVINCES.

In the transmission of Dispatches over these Lines, no responsibility is assumed beyond the exercise of due diligence, good faith, and the amount of tolls received. GEO. B. PRESCOTT, Sup't.

OFFICES.— BOSTON, Palmer's News Room, 83 State street, and 31 State street, corner Congress.
NEW BEDFORD, Commercial Telegraph Office, 9 North Water street.
GLOUCESTER, 74 Main street. SOUTH BOSTON, Broadway Post Office.

Boston May 2 1859.

By Telegraph from New Bedford

To Rev. R. Anderson

We have all arrived
well and wired thank you
for our letters to be sent
hither immediately.

W. P. Alexander

17

Rev. Wm. P. Alexander,

New Bedford, Ms. May 2, 1859.

Recd. May 2.

Letter [illegible]

Wrote May 2.

32

New Bedford May 2d /59

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

The Ship Mtn Wave anchored here last evening at dark & this morning we find ourselves under the hospitable roof of Mrs Brayton whose son George Brayton is a Merchant at Lahaina, We all (i.e.) wife, daughters Mary & Ellen, Master T. S. Bond & myself are in good health-

We had a long but very pleasant passage. Capt Hardy's kind care of his passengers is equalled only by his care & skill in

managing his ship & crew.
We must stop here a
few days to wash off the
marks of the voyage &
then will be ready to move.
My family wish to be
getting out westward.
but I must see you to
consult about my work
first.
Shall I go up to Boston
alone, or wait & take
my family with me?
I might go & see you
while they are necessa-
rily detained here &
return & take them
direct to N.Y. They
however would rather
go via Boston.
I have just been to

the Telegraph office to inform you of our arrival -

Please address me at
No 70 S. Second Street
N. Bedford

As Ever yours
W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

New Bedford May 2. '59.

Rec'd. May 3.

Electric Marine Telegraphs,

COMPRISING THE FOLLOWING LINES:

CAPE ANN, CAPE COD, CAPE COD MARINE, COMMERCIAL AND PALMER'S, HULL, COHASSET AND SCITUATE.

EXTENDING FROM

BOSTON TO GLOUCESTER PROVINCETOWN, PLYMOUTH, NEW BEDFORD, AND ALL STATIONS UPON CAPE ANN, CAPE COD, MARTHA'S VINEYARD, NANTUCKET AND SOUTH SHORE,

AND CONNECTING WITH ALL LINES IN THE UNITED STATES AND BRITISH PROVINCES.

In the transmission of Dispatches over these Lines, no responsibility is assumed beyond the exercise of due diligence, good faith, and the amount of tolls received. **GEO B. PRESCOTT, Sup't.**

OFFICES.— Boston, Palmer's News Room, 83 State street, and 31 State street, corner of Congress.
New Bedford, Commercial Telegraph Office, 9 North Water street.
Gloucester, 74 Main street. South Boston, Broadway Post Office.

Boston May 30 1859.

By Telegraph from New Bedford

To Rev R Anderson D.D

33 Pemberton Square

I proceed to Boston by the care tomorrow morning

W. P. Alexander

9.25

Rev. W. P. Alexander

New Bedford, May 3, 1859

Rd. May 3/59

✓

34 Boston Aug 15th 1859 34

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

Last saturday I had the privilege of reading the late general letter of the Hawaiian Evangelical Association. That part of it relating to a native ministry I read with pain & must enter my protest against it as heretical. The position manifestly taken is, that they consider the ordaining of native pastors over the churches to be unwise, inexpedient & fraught with evil. If the gospel ministry were an institution invented by human wisdom, we might consider the objections the brethren make worthy of serious consideration, whereas, in fact, they are a presumptuous criticism of His ordinances whose work is perfect. How often have I seen extended plains on our islands, that for most of the year are dry & barren, covered with millions of catterpillars: these were not brought into existence until

until those dry plains were covered with verdure. The newborn infant finds the very nourishment it needs ready for its use & the mother's heart filled with that tenderness which secures the care & protection its helplessness requires. In the natural world God's works are perfect. And can we imagine that He will now create a people new in Christ Jesus & leave them on the barren plain to perish? Or leave them to be fed by pastors who can visit them only once in three months? It cannot be.

The Apostles, who were the first missionaries, when they gathered churches among the heathen, very soon ordained pastors over them all. The pastor when set apart to his work feels that he sustains a new & tender relation to the people, & he does possess new ability to do them good, he also feels new responsibilities resting upon him & is roused to more diligent & undivided consecration to his work.* The office was not instituted at random,

* If asked "What advantage is there in ordaining a native ministry," I would reply with Paul "Much every way" Rom. III. 1, 2.

but in infinite wisdom, & without it our churches would wither & die.

For more than fifteen years the teachers of the Seminary of Lahainaluna have devoted special labor to fit young men of piety & talents for the work of the gospel ministry & have pressed upon their brethren the importance of licensing them to preach, & when they had proved themselves worthy, of ordaining them as pastors of the churches; but the brethren have been slow to act & opposed obstacles in the way continually. In the progress of our work three of the teachers of the Seminary removed to Oahu, Clark, Andrews & Emerson & carried with them the purpose to get natives into the ministry & through their influence several worthy Hawaiian Pastors have been ordained on Oahu; several also have been ordained on Maui, where the Seminary is located; but none on Hawaii or Kauai & yet some of our

most worthy candidates for the ministry have gone to those islands.

The ordaining of native pastors has not been a failure. Far otherwise, I consider it the clearest proof of our success as a mission. No part of our field has exhibited more substantial prosperity ~~than~~ was exhibited in Keokea during the period that David Malo lived to be their pastor, or Kaanapali while Kauwealoha & his successor Kaukau were their successive pastors, both of whom are now noble & worthy missionaries ~~—~~ in the Marquesas Islands. There too is Kekela a burning & a shining light, taken from the church of Kahuku on the island of Oahu, over which he had been ordained their pastor. I might also mention Mahoe taken from the church of Ewa of which Bro Bishop was pastor, to aid H. Bingham jun in the Kingsmill groupe. There are others

holding up the light in the foreign field whom I might mention. And is the fact that they have been found worthy to go forth as messengers of the churches to the heathen proof that we have failed in our efforts to raise up a native ministry?

But it is said the churches are falling off & running down under native pastors. If they refer to the churches of Ewa & Kahuku & Waianae, I would submit the enquiry, whether the Ewa church had not run down under bro Bishop before the native minister commenced his labors? & whether that portion of Waialua of which bro Emerson continues pastor is in any better condition than Kahuku which was taken off from his field for the native pastor? Whether in fact some fault of these American missionaries did not lay the foundation for the spiritual dearth that now blights those fields?

This slowness to introduce worthy men into the ministry drives them into secular posts & thus they are almost lost to the church. I doubt not but the noble men whom I have named & others who are now preaching at the islands, would now be filling government offices, if they had not been put into the ministry. Governors & men in high places have importuned them to accept offices notwithstanding they were ordained pastors, but they nobly replied "We are doing a great work & cannot come down." Another evil resulting from this tardiness to introduce natives into the ministry is, that multitudes of church members have no responsible pastor whom they can see more than 3 or 4 times a year. As well might half a dozen ministers be pastors of all Massachusetts & have deacons scattered here & there to conduct meetings!

And further there is danger that

when the present pastors die the structure will fall to pieces, for it would be as unreasonable to expect that pastors should continue to be sent to supply those churches from this country for all time to come, as to expect that food should be sent to feed the inhabitants or schools furnished to educate their children. In all these respects every nation when evangelized must provide for itself.

But why have the missionaries been so tardy in bringing forward a native ministry? It is apparent that a barbarous people, when brought under the influence of the gospel, differ much from a converted Greek or Roman community & differ too from converts among the Armenians or Turks or Persians. There is therefore reason why the missionary to a barbarous people should wait till men could be enlightened & trained in some measure for the work. But this has been done. We have able

men in the Legislature & on the judges bench & in all the departments of government, why not in church as well as state? I fear in many cases our brethren have been influenced by the love of power & by avarice.

1. The love of power. They wish to hold the keys, to manage the church in their own way. They think they can do it better than others & the heart loves power. E.g. Bro Bingham would not consent to have a second church organised in Honolulu by bro Smith & it required a strong vote of the mission to carry the measure. Bro Baldwin would not consent to have bro Forbes gather a second congregation in Lahaina. He would not consent to the ordination of David Malo so long as he wished to be located on Lanai or at Ukumehame, which were in his field, but he was very ready to join in ordaining him at Keokea which was away in another part of the island. Bro Lowde earnestly opposed the settlement of David Malo at Honuaula a part of his field 22 miles distant from his

(2d Sheet)

station & which he visited only four times a year & he even disciplined some of his people there for joining in a call to have Malo become their pastor. Similar reasons I believe have influenced bro Coan & others to oppose the settlement of native pastors in their fields.

2 I suggested that Avarice had some influence in the matter. This is a rather delicate suggestion but I believe it is a reality. A pastor can get a larger salary from a large field than from a small one. And the feeling of independence is pleasant. They like to be relieved from the necessity of stating their wants & calling on the Board for help. To carve up their mammoth churches & form distinct parishes with distinct pastors would so reduce the number who contribute to their support that the amount would not meet the wants of their families, & hence without

knowing exactly what moves them, they oppose the measure.

But I am becoming tedious. I am entirely persuaded that much more is required of a pastor than to baptize & admit to the church & administer the Lord Supper. If that were all, two men could take charge of all the Hawaiian churches & spend four sabbaths per annum with each church. This would only be extending the present system a little further. But it is human folly; our blessed Master has instituted a far wiser plan & I trust our brethren there will come up to the work of carrying out his plan in good earnest.

Please excuse the haste with which I have been compelled to write. I send you the first draft, & remain very truly

Yours in the gospel

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

Boston Aug. 15, 1859.

Rec'd. Aug. 15.

Ackd [illegible]

His views on the ordination of Native Pastors — in reply to statements in the General letter from the Mission.

Prud. Com.

ABC 19.1 v.14

Alexander, W.P.

35. A.L. to R. Anderson; 18 Aug. 1859
36. A.L. to R. Anderson; New York, 23 Aug. 1859
37. A.L. to C.L. Mills; 13 Sept. 1859
38. A.L. to R. Anderson; 13 Sept. 1859

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

N. Y. City Aug 18. 1859

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother

Mr. Wood, our Secretary here, suggests that the letter I proposed to write to you, respecting our ecclesiastical matters at the islands, had better be addressed to him than to you, & I think I could speak more freely to a third person & shall comply with his suggestion.

I reached Williamstown Monday P.M. & spent tuesday with Dr. Hopkins. He recommended Prof Crosby of N.Y. University, but the prof. will not go. Prof Crosby recommended in turn Prof Martin of the same University so highly that Pres Hopkins thought I ought to pursue enquiries in regard to him. I have conferred with a number of gentlemen well acquainted with Prof Martin & feel satisfied he is not the man.

Pres. Hopkins also recommended Cyrus T. Mills of Ware Ms. so highly that I feel unwilling to go out to Indianapolis till I have made more effort towards getting a man for Oahu college. Mr. Mills was once one of your Missionaries to Ceylon & if his health is sufficient I think he would probably suit the post we have for him — I propose to go back to New Haven this P.M. & take counsel there before proceeding further.

I received a line from br Clark this morning informing me he had succeeded in his efforts & matters were all arranged in reference to a Help meet His Divine Master promised he should henceforth become a fisher of men, but he has done more for him, He has also made him a skillful fisher of women! He expects to be ready to embark for Honolulu

on the 20th of Oct.

I could not see Mr Gordon on Monday before I set out for Williamstown, else I would have applied to him for some money - I have not enough to take me out west & bring me back again. May I trouble you to request him to send me $100.00 or authorise me to draw that sum from Mr Merwin - Let him address me here at the Bible House Astor place -

I wrote you just before I left Boston respecting a native Ministry at the islands what I hope will meet your wishes - As ever yours

W. P. Alexander.

Rev. Wm. P. Alexander,

New York City, Augt. 18, 1859

Recd. Augt. 19, 1859.

Ans. Augt 19 -

N. York Aug 23d. 1859

Rev R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Bro,

I have visited Ware & seen Bro Mills. His health is not vigorous, but I think it probable that all he needs is a little rest to become a strong man. His wife is quite vigorous & she possesses eminent qualities to render her valuable in Oahu College. I think she has few equals for a post there. Dr. Hopkins recommended him in no measured terms. He knew him well when in College & bro Mills has spent some time in Williamstown since he returned from Ceylon, & I supposed therefore Pres Hopkins was well qualified to form an opinion in the case. This is my apology for going on to see him without waiting to

to consult first with you. I however told Mr. Mills that before I could make a definite proposition to him I must secure the approbation both of yourself & bro. Clark.

Mr. Wood our Secretary here is very favorably impressed in regard to Mr. Mills, so also is Secretary Coe of the Home Mission Society & Dr. Hallock of the Tract Society.

I think Mills would go, if the friends of the college should think it best. But if he is not the man for us, he had better not go. He is a very plain man one I think that will improve on acquaintance. He could not be ready to go till next spring.

I hope the right way will be made plain before that time. I expect to set out for Indianapolis tomorrow

Very truly yours

W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander

New York Aug. 23. 1859.

Rec'd. Aug. 24.

Ans Aug. 25

Copy. Paris Ky. Sep 13. 1857

Rev C. T. Mills

Dear Brother

Since I came out West, I have received two letters from you, also one from Mr Castle, a Trustee of Oahu college, written from San Francisco whither he has come on business. He thinks he has found the man there for our college & writes so strongly that in view of your uncertain health I have written to the Trustees, advising them to act on bro Castle's suggestions & call Mr Rowell, now Seamen's chaplain, to the head of Oahu college.

The exercise of soul to which my visit to Ware has given rise in you & your dear wife

37

will do no harm to either of you, & I have at least added myself to the number of those who will ever entertain a high esteem and warm fraternal affection for you both.

Much love to all your households
Very truly yours
W. P. Alexander.

Paris Ky Sep 13. 1859

Rev R. Anderson D.D.,
Dear Brother

I received yours of Aug 25 just before I left Indianapolis & I have been moving about since, so as not to be able to write. The copy of Mr Emerson's letter which accompanied it I have read carefully. The sentiments it contains I have often heard before & I believe they are held only by Mr Emerson

What he says is so crude, that I cannot reduce the medley to definite propositions. The one idea however is manifest, viz the Hawaiians must be taught the Eng language in order to save them. And yet his whole letter would inevitably lead to the conclusion that there is no hope of raising up native pastors & the American churches must continue to furnish a supply in all time to come.

For if a native pastor now must live on fish & poi in order that he may get along, he surely could not live cheaper, if he had mastered the Eng language.

& if more lucrative posts offer temptations to worthy men to draw them from the ministry, they will be none the less likely to be offered when they understand the Eng language. And if Mr Emerson has only been saved from scandalous sin by such an array of appliances, unless the natives are much more richly endowed with grace, there will be no hope for any of them for generations to come. But such are not the facts. Take the natives who have in some measure learned Eng as a class, they are more im-moral than the rest of their nation.

Our blessed Lord has renewed many Hawaiians, who are washed & sanctified & justified in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ & by the spirit of our God, who understand no Eng. & who are freed from scandalous vice & live lives of faith on the son of God. Some of these have been ordained as pastors, such as Davis Malo, Kaumealoha, Kekula, Kaukau,

Kuaea & Mahoe, who for years have filled the sacred office as faithful servants of the Lord Jesus & are still giving full proof of their ministry. Many more ought to have been ordained & our chhs are suffering for the want of it.

It is very desirable that a minister understand Eng & German & Latin, Greek & Hebrew, yet none of these languages are necessary in order to enable him to preach Christ & Him crucified & to persuade men every where to repent. And while we put men into the harness to carry forward the work of the Lord in the islands, we ought to use all diligence to increase their fitness for their work. I do not believe that there are no men in Mr Coan's & Lyons' fields who ought ~~not~~ to be ordained now. I am not so acquainted as to be able to specify the individuals, though I could name Waimu in Mr Lyons field a graduate

from Lahainaluna who would make an excellent pastor; so also would Nahinu, in Kona in Mr Paris' field.

Men of good common sense, real piety & sound discretion, with such training as they can get at Lahainaluna Sem. are the men needed for pastors by the churches. Such men, they can support & such men can be found to meet the demand. But to raise up a native ministry of liberally educated men would require many years & a great outlay of money. The people would waste away while we are raising up the pastors & when ready for work, they would require as large a salary as ministers from foreign lands of similar acquirements receive, & the churches would be no nearer sustaining themselves than they are now.

In answering the questions at the close of your letter I would say

1. I do not think the views relative to a native ministry advocated in the late Genl. letter of the mission, rest on the same basis as those of Mr Emerson. His notions of the paramount importance of English are peculiar to himself.

2. "Are they at all influential?" I think they are not. 3. "How should they be met?" By denying that they are correct, they are not founded on truth & if acted on they would render certain the failure of our Missionary enterprise in the Hawaiian Islands.

In regard to a President for Oahu College, there is no danger that Mr Mills and his friends shall regard you as the cause of his not going. I shall write to him today telling him of the proposition of bro Castle one of our Trustees & state that in consideration of his (Mills) poor health, I have written to the Board of Trustees at Honolulu, suggesting that they act on Mr Castle's recommendation & extend a call to Mr Rowell.

I expect next week to go on with my wife towards Phila as far as Harrisburg & spend a week there before the annual meeting at Phila - I am now perplexed about my trunks which have got separated

from me in coming hither from
Indianapolis, but hope yet to find
them. As ever yours
W. P. Alexander

Rev. W. P. Alexander.
Paris Sep. 13. 1859.
Rec'd. Sep. 19.
Ans Oct 1

ABC 19.1 v.14

Alexander, W.P.

381/2. A.L. to R. Anderson; Paris, Ky. 13 Sept. 1859

Andrews, Claudius B.

39. A.L. to R. Andersnn; 8 April 1850
40. A.L. to [ ]; May 1850
41. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 Oct. 1850
42. A.L. to R. Anderson; 24 Feb. 1851

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

(copy) From Rev. Wm P. Alexander. 38½

Paris. Ky. Sept. 13/59.

"Rev. R. Anderson, D.D.

Dear Brother,

I received yours of Aug 25 just before I left Indianapolis & I have been moving about ever since, so as not to be able to write. The copy of Mr. Emerson's letter which accompanied it I have read carefully. The sentiments it contains I have often heard before and I believe they are held only by Mr. Emerson.

What he says is so crude, that I cannot reduce the medley to definite propositions. The one idea is manifest, viz the Hawaiians must be taught the Eng. language in order to save them. And yet his whole letter would inevitably lead to the conclusion that there is no hope of raising up native pastors and the American churches must continue to furnish a supply in all time to come. For if a native pastor now must

live on fish and poi in order that he may get along, he surely could not live cheaper, if he has mastered the Eng. language, and if more lucrative posts offer temptations to worthy men to draw them from the ministry, they will be more the less likely to be offered when they understand the Eng. language. And if Mr. Emerson has only been saved from scandalous sin by such an array of appliances, unless the natives are much ~~~~ more richly endowed with grace, there will be no hope for any of them for generations to come. But such are not the facts. Take the natives who have in some measure learned Eng. as a class, they are more immoral than the rest of their nation.

Our blessed Lord has renewed many Hawaiians, who are washed and sanctified & justified in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ & by the Spirit of our God, who understood

no English, & who are freed from scandalous vice & live lives of faith on the son of God. Some of these have been ordained as pastors, such as David Malo, Kaumealoka (Kauwealoha), Kekela, Kaukau, Kuaea, & Mahoe, who for years have filled the sacred office as faithful servants of the Lord Jesus and are still giving full proof of their ministry. Many more ought to have been ordained and our churches are suffering for the want of it.

It is very desirable that a minister understand Eng & German, & Latin & Greek & Hebrew, yet none of these languages are <u>necessary</u> in order to enable him to preach Christ and Him crucified and to persuade men everywhere to repent. And while we put men into the harness to carry forward the work of the Lord in the Islands we ought to use all diligence to increase their fitness for their work. I do not believe

that there are no men in Mr. Coan's and Lyons field who ought to be ordained now. I am not so acquainted as to be able to specify the individuals, though I could name Waiau in Mr. Lyons field a graduate from Lahaina-luna who would make an excellent pastor; so also would Nahina, in Kona in Mr Paris' field.

Men of good common sense, real piety & sound discretion, with such training as they can get at Lahainaluna Seminary are the men needed for pastors by the churches. Such men, they can support and such men can be found to meet the demands. But to raise up a native ministry of liberally educated men would require many years and a great outlay of money. The people would waste away while we are raising up the pastors, and when ready for work, they

would require as large a salary as ministers from foreign lands of similar acquirements receive and the churches would be no nearer sustaining themselves than they are now.

In answering the questions at the close of your letter I would say

1. I do not think the views relative to a native ministry advocated in the late Genl letter of the mission, rest on the same basis as those of Mr Emerson. His notions of the paramount importance of English are peculiar to himself. 2. "Are they at all influential"? I think they are not. 3. "How should they be met?" By denying that they are correct. They are not founded on truth and if acted on they would render certain the failure of our "missionary enterprise in the Hawaiian Islands".

Letters from Rev. Claudius B. Andrews.

1850 – 1855.

Boston April 8th 1850.

To the Rev. Rufus Anderson

Dear Sir

A subject of great importance as connected with the cause of Christ has occupied much of my thought since being connected with the A. B. & residing, as one of its missionaries, in the Pacific. It is this.

Ought not the Sandwich Island Mission & churches to become immediately auxiliary to the A. B. in carrying the gospel to the islands in northern Polynesia yet remaining in heathenism.

These islands seem to be left, as if by tacit consent, for the A. B. to send Christian institutions to them, while the southern Isles are receiving missionaries from the various Societies of England.

The gospel has triumphed at Hawaii, & all of its population has been brought to that state, in which they need some object to call out ~~their~~ their piety into lively exercise. Already, for lack of such an object that would interest their feelings, their energies have begun to be preoccupied in worldly ends, & are flowing out after worldliness generally, which ought to be directed to engagedness in building up Christs cause. For many years, both the churches & mission there were traveling through deep waters, surrounded with enemies & difficulties without, & struggles for & doubts about their final triumph within. But now they have emerged from these

difficulties & doubts. In this state unless some adequate object calls out their interest & effort to extend the cause they have espoused, not only will they remain barren branches of the ~~X~~ christian vine, but, their subjective piety will deteriorate & become extinct, & their energies be taken up in selfish ends. Facilities for acquiring money begin already to offer strong temptations to all christians in the Islands, from their nearness to California. Those who are now beginning to acquire property for the first time, ought to have objects before them, that would induce them to lay out a part of it & their personal labors for "the Kingdom of God & his righteousness."

They have no such object which would reawaken interest in their own minds. They have no outlet for their Mon. Con. contributions, already exceeding 1500 dollars annually, — no such outlet, I mean, as will reanimate their feelings to increased benevolence. They now give back these contributions to the A. B. but they do it with some such feelings as a son would, refunding the money for his education out of his poverty, to his father who is appearently wealthy.

The question will here be asked "is there such an object, or can ~~one~~ one be found to produce this desireable result"?

I would answer, that these same Leeward Isles of Polynesia are a field open & adapted to securing that end. They are near by them, untouched by other christians, and with inhabitants related to the Hawaiians. Hawaiians could be employed, together with & under the superintendance of Anglo Saxon Missionaries, (perchance of Island missionaries' children) in carrying the gospel thither, thereby becoming coworkers in spreading the cause onward.

But you will ask again, where is the accessible place of entrance upon this field? where the opening for missionaries to enter safely upon these new labors?

During my residence in the Pacific I have made many inquiries of the sailors of the whaling fleet (the only persons who visit these Islands) for the sake of learning their situation, the results of which inquiries permit me to lay before you for consideration.

The Caroline, Kingsmill & Ellice are three large groups of Islands, lying near the Equator & in Long. from 150° to 170° E. - inhabited by many thousands of Polynesians yet heathen.

The Kingsmill & Ellice groups are yet not safe to enter upon, the inhabitants being savage & perhaps canibals. On one island alone of this group, viz Makin, would it be prudent to commence Mission labor at present, as any one will clearly see from reading a full account of these islanders in "Wilkes' voyage". Makin might be entered upon

safely. But a much more, & very favorable point to enter upon labor, lies open before us in the Caroline Group. I have seen no one who has been to any, except to two of that group. These are Strong's & Ascension Islands, & the characteristics of the soil, climate, & in some respects, of the people in each, were characteristics common also to the other, although reported to me by different individuals.

They both lie to eastward end of the Caroline group, & are therefore central between it & the Kingsmill group. Strong's Island is put down on Wilkes Chart, as "Ualan," in Lat. 5° 20' N. & Long. 164° East.

In the "Friend," a seaman's paper printed at Honolulu for Feb. 1st 1837 is an account of this island by a pious captain. Besides this, I have learned from various persons the following particulars.

1st The number of inhabitants & their political condition, There are not many inhabitants there, perhaps about 2,000. I regard this rather as favorable than otherwise for commencing a mission in that region; as ~~as~~ they will not be disproportionate to the efforts for their conversion, of two families & the small outlay they require. But their political condition is still more favorable for commencing a mission there, than in any other place known. This handfull of people are all in complete subjection to one King.

Instead of being divided up between independent & hostile chiefs warring against each other, as are Polynesians generally, all of the inhabitants are united & own one head, & show ~~[illegible]~~ allegiance to him alone.

2nd They are complaisant towards foreigners, desire intercourse with, & in many things imitate them.

The King has heard of the elevation of the Hawaiians, & has expressed strong desires that missionaries would come & live with him. My informant thought that he would receive with deference & treat with respect, any mission family, with a character, as superior every way to the foreigners whom the King has seen, as are the missionaries generally of the A. B. He is desirous, as are his chiefs under him, of associating with foreigners, & are generous to them. While my informant was there the Capt. of three whale ships were boun-

tifully supplied with fresh provision by the King, who frequently went off on board, and dined with them.

3^d In regard to language there is a peculiarity among the Strongs islanders, very favorable for commencing missionary labor there. The whole people have obtained some knowledge of the English language, enough for the conveying a good degree of thought to & from them in our tongue. This was remarked to me spontaniously by many persons disconnected with each other, as a matter of surprise to them.

They spoke of their distinct enunciation of English when the inhabitants talked with them, as a matter of wonder, especially as the Hawaiians cannot do it now after many years intercourse with us.

This same trait was remarked to me by a foreigner who had lived 18 months on Ascension Island. I asked him to repeat to me some of their native words, & found they contained, rough & strong sounds never found in the fluent Hawaiian.

The people, but especially the King, chiefs & children, exhibit an aptness in acquiring & pronouncing our language, & they have a strong desire to talk it. From what I can learn, a missionary going there could immediately begin to communicate with them in english, without ~~going~~ waiting the tedious process of learning a new language before beginning to teach them.

Their very desire of learning English would draw them under his influence, as he could go to work immediately with english books, & carry his tools with him. They are a singing people, & have got by heart & sing sailor's songs of all descriptions. This trait could be made good use of, in getting & retaining a hold of this people.

4th The soil & climate are good at both these islands. Food grows luxuriantly, consisting mainly of bread-fruit, taro, yams, cocoanuts, & bananas.

The islands are evidently volcanic & not coral simply, as are the Kingsmill & other low groups.

They rise high in the interior, & are well timbered. Rivers ~~ascend into~~ descend from the interior several miles, part of the way completely hidden underneath trees, whose arms interlock over them, & whose deep clear water abounds with fish, of all kinds common to the tropics. The woods come down to the waters edge ~~near~~ on the coasts.

Strongs island consists of two a larger & smaller whose size is given in "The Friend" by Capt. — Ascension island is the largest of the Caroline group, lying about 300 miles N. W. of Strongs, & having therefore the N. E. "trade winds" abeam so that vessels could lay both ways.

The distance could be passed in less than two days-sail either way. The inhabitants of Ascension island are divided & in a constant state

one tribe of warfare with another. Besides, there are thirty or forty runaway foreigners there, who are represented as worse than natives. There are none at Strong's.

Besides whaleships, scooners from China come to these islands for "beech de mer."

5th Their position is central, & if the gospel should find success there is the best position, geographically for irradiating its light around, to different groups on every side. & yet they are so isolated as not to be in danger ~~from~~ of attack from other islands.

Other items interesting to us, I obtained concerning this people, especially about their religious ceremonies, health &c. but they are too long for this limited communication; but should you deem this subject worthy of farther consideration I would be most happy to converse with you personally in regard to it.

I think the bearing which a new mission extending thither from the Hawaiian Isles, would have on the welfare of Northern Polynesia — its reflex influence on the prosperity, yea the life of christianity in the mission & mission churches already established at the Hawaiians Isles — its reflex influence also on the Missionary Spirit here at home, when your patrons ~~they~~ see their missions becoming co-workers with themselves in helping on the great work, — is worthy of being pondered well.

I remain yours Sincerely C. B. Andrews

Rev. C. B. Andrews, Boston, April 8, 1858, Rec'd April 8.
Respecting a mission to the Caroline Islands.

Cincinnatti May 1850

Rev. & Dear Sir

I write you from this city, where I came somewhat unexpectedly, even to myself.

When in conversation with you at Boston, I did not inform you, as I perhaps should, that one source of great anxiety to me, during my last year's stay at the Islands, was the impaired state, both bodily & mentally, of a sister very dear to me, She was next to me in age, - had been my play-mate through all early life, - but for 3 years her health had been declining, & her mind, once celestic, poetic, & of most delicate sensibility, had become morbidly so on the subject of her own personal salvation.

On this topic, her mind was in a most distressing state, gloom had overshadowed her, she could not reason correctly, nor be convinced by reasoning, Although a most consistent christian for 15 years, - & would have gone with me, or anywhere else, to the "ends of the earth", to do good in Christ's cause, yet she had lost all hope, & —

When I was in Boston with you, my mind was burdened with a double grief. One & the same letter had just announced that I would never meet again my mother in this world, & that this sister was in an asylum for the Insane, — a most cruel reversion of the happiness I had anticipated. It was with difficulty I could maintain that cheerfulness before strangers which propriety demanded in my intercourse with you, & unfitted as I was, for either social or business intercourse

I hastened away, to meet & comfort my father under his bereavment in old age, & from thence to Columbus, to see if my return & society might not paradventure have some effect in restoring my sister to her former state.

I was happy in finding her improved, & after a weeks stay at Columbus, the Principal of the Asylum recommended me to take her with me here to Cincinnatti, & introduce her to cheerful society, where I traveled, hoping that, thereby, her restoration would be perfect. The result thus far is very favorable.

I have communicated intelligence, - wherever I could raise a congregation, - about the Hawaiian Mission, govt, people, churches, climate, & habits. In all other places, I have had full crouded congregations. But here I have been a week & more & cannot find any opening. Every pulpit is full of old School Ministers, as there assembly is now in session. Good Xns & Elders to whom I am introduced, & whom I formerly knew, seem full of interest in our operations, & are all expecting to hear fully about them, but the ministers seem bound to shew a double courtesy to their Old School brethren. I found no opening last Sabbath morning, & only occupied the afternoon & Evening, besides addressing a morning S. School. Last Evening also, (Wednesday) every one had engaged an old School man to preach & I expect it will be so next Sabbath. Shall I wait untill

"low water" again & let them float off? I am tired of talking to one man at a time, & unless some one offers me a place today or tomorrow for next Sabbath, I will shoulder my Sachel & float off myself, into ~~the~~ country places beyond this glut of ministers.

By the way, this same Old School Body, manifests a glut of Sectarianism unequaled by any sect I am acquainted with in the States, not excepting the Methodist.

All their proceedings seem not tinctured, but — saturated with "our church," "our Seminaries," "our schools" & "our Mission", & the "mighty struggle" that "we" made to give it birth 13 years ago, & "dissever ourselves from other bodies." They played the Rev. Dr. Poor last Monday Eve at their Missionary meeting, a most scurvy trick, by inviting him to give up an appointment made for him to Speak that Evening at Lane Seminary, (of which they knew before) & address their body at that meeting, but, by appointing three Speakers before him, a Georgian, some one, I know not, & Robt. J. Breckenridge, he, as well as many who went solely to hear him, were edified with their glorification Speeches, untill 10 o.clock & then ~~was~~ dismissed.

The neglect was the more cutting, in that Breckenridge, who occupied the last hour, spun it out with laudation of their labors for the last 13 years, & dwelt long on the mighty effort, made then, to cut themselves free from other Societies,

I would like to hear from you any intelligence from our mission. Has the Prudential Comtee yet considered that topic upon which we had some conversation viz. that of extending the efforts of the Board, through the auxiliary agency of the Hawaiian mission & churches, to other other Islands in the Pacific, I have, in conversation with some influential friends of the Board & mission, placed the mission before them in that light & predicted that it will some day occupy such a position & relation both to this country & to the Pacific Isles, & I find, that it places our position in a new & most interesting light before their minds.

Please inform me as soon as you are able whether any action is contemplated by the Comtee on this subject.

If you write within two weeks from this date, or so that your letter will reach there within that time please address.

Rev. C. B. Andrews
Care of Rev. Marcus Hicks
Portsmouth
Ohio

Give my regards to your family & associate Secretaries & believe me most truly,

yours as Ever
C. B. Andrews

P.S. A letter of introduction & ~~recommendation~~ as a missionary, from your selves would be of essential service to me, in places where I am a Stranger. C. B. A.

Rev. C. B. Andrews,
Cincinnati, May —, 1850.
Rec'd June 3, 1850.
Ans. June 3.

Walnut Hills Oct. 10th 1850

Rev. & Dear Sir

It was my design to address you a letter before leaving Vermont, or to have visited you in Boston before returning here, but I was called back in such haste, that I could do neither of them. Proposals had been partly made to me, by one of the trustees of Lane Sem. & an elder of this church, that I spend the next year preaching for them as I had been doing during the summer, & be the teacher in Hebrew for the class entering the Sem. this fall. It was suggested in the course of conversation I held with him. in which I mentioned the same desire I did to you, coming from Oswego. viz. I ardently wished to spend another year maturing, systematizing, & improving the education I had gathered only desultorily in past years. His proposal seemed so apropos to the accomplishment of my desire, that I considered & prayed over it. It was to be decided, when I should meet Prof. Allen (of this Sem.) at Oswego.

But by some casualty, we did not meet there, except for a few minutes in the church of Dr. Condict, & the letter he left with Dr. C. offering me both of the above mentioned places, never reached me.

It was only last week that I heard of it, by a letter from him, desiring me to come forthwith, as the

Session had commenced & they were waiting for me.

I feel dear Sir that this year, spent in this labor & its accompanying advantages of study & ministerial practice (sermonizing) will not be the loss of a year, but a great gain which will be felt (with God's blessing) through every year of my remaining life. Every year spent at the Islands has made me feel my deficiency in systematic mental training, though I cherished the fruits of observation & experience & in the scramble, if I may so express it, of missionary toil at a back station, I snatched moments for study. It was by such means I have attained enough of Hebrew literature to be accepted as tutor of it here this winter.

The course by which Mrs. Andrews has attained her education already acquired, has been very analogous to my own, & her desire for a year of solid study & improvement, before entering upon the solid engagements of life, is only commensurate with my own.

As a substitute in fulfilling your request to visit you in Boston with her, I can only give you some of the more important items of life which have contributed to making up her character.

Her name was Anne S. Gilson of Cavendish Vt. After her common school & Academical education, She lived a year at New Haven in the family of & studying with her brother in law Rev. Daniel March, now pastor of a Cong. church in Nashua N. Hampshire.

Then ~~left~~ thrown on her own resources, she engaged in teaching in her native State, Then providence opening the opportunity, she went to Mississippi & was engaged there for three years, teaching in two different female boarding schools, carrying on at the same time a system of self education, reading & study untill her health failed & she left there in the Summer of 1849. On her way home, she became acquainted in Cincinnati with Mrs. Vail wife of Rev. F. Y. Vail of the Tract Soc. Mrs. V. sent for her last Spring to engage her as teacher in her school for young ladies on Walnut Hills, where I became acquainted with her & had a good opportunity of studying her character & acquirements unsuspected by any one even herself.

You may ask, why I married so soon, if she still wished to spend another year in the States studying?

I did it to save her health which has been suffering for years from over exertion. I found her engaged for the next year, to take one branch of "Cincinnati Female Seminary," (at whose head is Miss. Coxe sister in Law of Bishop Mc. Ilvane) with a salary of 600 dollars.

With such labor before her, & her habit of not sparing herself in her engagements, she could neither recruit in health nor accomplish the kind of preparation for mission life, for which she now is preparing.

I would refer you to Rev. Dan.l March. Nashua & to Danl. A. Heald, Cashier of the Bank of Black river Proctorsville Vt. as persons who are well acquainted with her. both of whom are warm friends of the A. B.

I have not had letters from any of the S. I. Mission for the last two months. & should be very glad to learn if you have any recent intelligence from there, any of which would be interesting to me.

I have borrowed from Dr. Weed agt. of the "Board" in Cin. thirty five dollars the greater part of which amnt. I expended in traveling since I landed in the States ~~exclusively~~ lecturing & giving intelligence about missions of the Board & the S. I. Mission particularly. As I have defrayed my own expenses entirely by my own labor & economy. I think you will not consider it out of order, to cover those which I have incurred exclusively in the service of the Board.

I have lectured, on the S. I. Mission in many places in this vicinity, on the Western Reserve & in Pittsburg

I Remain Yours Sincerely

C. B. Andrews

Ro. C. B. Andrews, Walnut Hills, Oct. 10, 1850.
Recd Oct. 22/1850.
Ans. Jan. 31/51.

Walnut Hills. Feb. 24th 1851.

Rev. & Dear Sir

Your letter of Jan. 31st relieved me of some anxiety occasioned by your silence, for which I could account, only upon the supposition of your being preoccupied with more important duty.

To your request that I inform you of the time we shall be able to return, I would state, that I am obligated (& privileged) to teach in the Seminary here until the session closes which is to be in June. My aged father thinks that I have neglected him & requests me to spend the next summer months with him. Mrs Andrews parents desire us to spend the two following months with them which is reasonable, as she has spent but little of her time at home ~~~~ during the last four years.

This will leave us ready to return to the Islands about the 1st of Nov. and I know of nothing now that will hinder our Embarkation any time after the 1st of Nov. The same mail which brought your letter brought one also from Mr. Alexander of Lahainaluna pressing my return as soon as I possibly could to that station. We hardly needed the prompting as preparation for future labor there, has guided all our studies & avocations this winter, & will during the Summer.

You ask me to "be free in making suggestions as to the proposed Mission", & I will do so as freely as if my opinion was valuable.

A Mission to any of the islands in Micronesia ought to be commenced by some of the most judicious elder missionaries of the Hawaiian Mission.

The future character of a Mission is always modified through ages by its pioneers. Tahiti affords a living illustration of this truth, where noble men have labored in vain to nullify evils which grew up from a miserable commencement. The undesirable, as well as the excellent traits of some of the pioneers of the Hawaiian Mission are in full growth at Honolulu, & will continue, them, long after they are dead.

There must be long experience in every Mission before either progress or prosperity appears, to encourage its undertakers. That experience must be gained from some source, & five, ten & even fifteen years pass before new missions begin to shew the fruits of labor bestowed upon them. A practical acquaintance by a missionary of the way in which a heathen reasons & feels, is next in importance, to the Holy Spirit's influence in gaining their attention to religious truth. The very logic of Gentile mind is different from that of one brought up familiar with bible thought. Father Thurston could understand in a few days how to adapt truth to a Kingsmill or Caroline Islander, better than an inexperienced pioneer could find out in as many years.

In the use of funds also experience in Missions is invaluable. A new missionary in a new mission would be apt to lay out injudicious, labor, strength & funds

until a vast deal of each were wasted in experimenting. The Hawaiian Mission has been a series of experiments. Conducted with New England & Christian foresight, those experiments have led to glorious results.

But if the same mission were to be begun now ~~with~~ with the experience which has been gained therefrom to guide its outlays, greater results than has been, could be accomplished, with but a moiety of its past expenditure. For inst. 77000 dollars were expended at Lahainaluna before it was ceded to the H. Govt. It has been invaluable to the mission & nation, but a small part of that sum could now be laid out to the building of a better school by Messrs. Castle Alexander. Paris or Bond, with their experience gained in that mission. You will not need the inference to be drawn. What is it, but that, in estab. similar foundations among a similar people & similarly situated, the wisdom of such men should be taken as the starting point. Such foundations should not be committed to inexperienced young men who can only blunder along, perhaps a little better than former missionaries have, to experience already gained.

My observation of Mr. Paris both at the Islands, & through our voyage home inclines me to think that he would be a very good pioneer in the proposed mission. He is a man of good judgment, discreet, prudent, yet efficient, & a man of unvacillating principle & piety. His greatest disqualification would be his want of facility in mastering the minutia of another language. His faults of character compared with those of most men are trivial.

There is in this Sem. a young man eminently calculated for a missionary. I suggested to him the propriety of going to a foreign field but he seems too busily engaged in study to decide on what course to enter after attaining his profession. He would rank high in any Seminary as a persevering studious & earnest scholar. He was prepared to practice medicine, but being reconverted he gave that up & has entered upon Theological study.

He ought to have an invitation to a foreign field by those responsible in seeking for foreign laborers.

His name is Thomas Tenler, now a Junior in this Sem. formerly of Xenia Ohio. Another of equal promise perhaps is Mr. Wilber but his mind is set on the western field he having come here from Indiana.

A third person here who suggested to me last Summer his interest in, & willingness to go to the Island mission, has a fine mind & the very best traits of a missionary, but he is lame, — one leg being some inches shorter than the other, & he goes entirely by the aid of crutches. His name is Mr. — Curtis a graduate of Marietta College, & now in the middle Class of this Sem.

His qualifications for a teacher's post are most admirable. Of his aptness & capacity for teaching successfully I had full demonstration last Summer. I have no doubt but that he could be obtained as a missionary teacher of high character, & his phisical impediment is his only disqualification.

I remain Yours Sincerely

C. B. Andrews

Rev. C. B. Andrews,
Walnut Hills, Feb. 24/57
Recd March 4.
Ansd March 28/57
ans'd by Dr. A

ABC 19.1 v.14
Andrews, Claudius B.
43. A.L. to R. Anderson; 4 April 1851
44. Same; 1 May 1851
45. Same; 25 July 1851
46. Same; 9 Aug 1851
47. Same; 2 Sept 1851
48. Same; 27 Sept 1851
49. Same; 5 Oct 1851
THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Walnut Hills April 4th 1857.

Rev. & Dear Sir.

I rec'd yours of March 24th this morning & as you request will answer forthwith.

I am glad to hear that young men "willingly offer themselves" to this work. I know that if they go forth with a persevering trust in God, they will reap a rich reward in their own bosoms besides the fruit of labor in a harvest of souls which it may please God to give, even as he has given.

In regard to the fitness of myself for "taking the leading agency" in the formation of a new mission to Micronesia, permit me to state frankly,–

That it was not from modesty that I suggested bro. Paris as best adapted for that pioneering, nor was it from ignorance of our respective fitness therefor. If I had been,– if I were, constituted & qualified as well as, or better than, he, for that position, I should have stated it plainly, leaving it for you to find out, when providence shewed, whether the statement were made from the dictate of vanity– or judgment. I will state what things may unfit me & mine for such a responsibility.

To go to such a field requires a persevering, buoyant faith, built upon God,– but seconded by a disposition always hoping & patiently awaiting better things. It is almost an indispensable to life among

heathen. Whatever may be my faith, received by the grace of God, I am totally lacking in the afore-mentioned disposition. I have, constitutionally, times of gloom & despondency, which experience in the Hawaiian Mission, tells me is the thing most unfitting me for going ahead in any moral enterprise. I inherited it from my father, & would have been ashamed to mention such a thing eight years ago — but those years with their retrospect, make me tremble to go farther out of others' buoying me up, than I have been.

During many periods, while on Molokai, I lived on Mr. Hitchcock's faith alone, — worked & acted for his sake, in such a state of gloom, that if it had not been for his sorrow at such conduct, I should have quit the field.

Another thing leaves me in distressing doubt of my fitness for the place in consideration. I have worked in the ministry nine years, & have seen no fruit to my labors, — save the general improvement of society. I know not of a soul converted under my preaching. If there is something about me, & my manner of thinking & uttering my thoughts, which the Holy Ghost cannot bless, it is vain to send me to such a place. Let me be a "hewer of wood or drawer of water" a teacher, or something else, among men where the work has been begun &c. I have been trying, all this past year to improve in preaching the gospel, & hope yet to do good thereby, but I should have more confidence to

go into unbroken ground, if I had seen proofs that the Holy Spirit had used my labors as an instrumentality in convincing & converting souls.

One thing more I ought to mention. Mrs. A's health may not prove as good as I hoped.

During her residence in Mississippi, she was taken with chills & fever, & suffered a long course of sickness, the effects of which she experiences yet.

I hope, that she will recover perfectly the next summer, & that it will be appearent, that no phisical obstacles will lie in the way of our foreign labor.

My own health is good, my constitution vigorous & healthful, & neither of us shrink from going to the worst savages if we are qualified to do good commensurate with the sacrifice.

Permit me to consult with you in regard to house-building in the Pacific.

Many ladies of the earlier missionaries to the Sandwich Islands, suffered in health & strength from living in damp & illy constructed native houses before they could import or build good ones. That loss of health & strength was decidedly poor economy, not to speak of comfort.

The exportation of lumber, shingles, & other bulky building material to the Pacific Isles is very expensive. Our Depository at Honolulu could never furnish shingles for less than nine pr 1000 or pine lumber for less than eighty dollars pr. 1000 ft. Oil & paint were

costly in proportion. Besides – decay of wooden materials is much more rapid there, than in this country.

Every house in our Mission is a constant source of expenditure. The best roofs leak in a short time. A valuable per centum of our time is taken up fixing our houses, & keeping them fixed.

To obviate these evils. I have felt anxious to ascertain, if the house now constructed in England of galvanized iron, would not be the most economical, to procure at once, & save in the long run, time, labor, money, & health. If I had known with whom in England to correspond, I should ere this, have found out data for judging in this matter. Perhaps you may think the suggestion worthy of inquiry, either by letter to those who could inform you from England, or, perchance some business men in Boston or New York could furnish the requisite information. Ships go yearly from Liverpool to Honolulu, which could take iron out, not as freight, but as ballast – as lead is taken to China.

We leave here, for Kinsman, Trumbull Co., Ohio, in about 3 weeks, where any letters directed to us after that, will be rec^d with great pleasure. With regards to yourself from Mrs. Andrews,

I remain Yours truly

C. B. Andrews

Rev. C. B. Andrews,
Walnut Hills, April 4, 1857
Recd April 15/57
Ansd Hon. – Mr. Hall

Hon

Kinsman May 1st 1851.

Rev. & Dear Sir,

Your letter of April 17th was forwarded to me yesterday from "Walnut Hills," & I will answer it forthwith. In my last I did not decline going to Micronesia; I dare not decline, & could not decidedly accept.

Neither of us wish to be excused on account of the undesirable traits of that field of labor. We shrink not from its privations, hardships, or loss of Society. When we understand clearly that God calls us thither, & that we do not "run without being sent," we will be ready to go. I see nothing now inconsistent with our going, save that better persons, & more competent to the greatness of the work ought to begin its foundation.

Perhaps I ought to have written to you before, the reason why I have been & am still, so indefinite on this subject.

Mrs. A. expects to be confined in a few weeks, probably before this month closes. You doubtless understand that the result of that event will have an important bearing on our future locality. Phisicians assure me that in all probability her health will be established by it, & all previous ills disappear, but there is a possibility that the reverse will ensue. If after that event, her health is such that she can go on the new Mission as an efficient laborer, & not as a sick person, she feels no hesitation about going.

But if we go we will so much the more need Mr. Paris to go with us, to stand & labor side by our side in the work,

He is a tried laborer, & I was at first intending to accept of an appointment in the new field on condition of having him for an associate, as Barak said to Deborah: "If thou wilt go with me, then I will go, but if thou wilt not go with me, then I will not go," but second thought told me that I was too short sighted to make such stipulation with propriety.

Mr. Paris is in his prime instead of his decline, & I should feel comparatively safe cooperating with him.

I supposed from our conversation together a year ago, that although this project was to be set in motion, its frame work adjusted, & men provided for it here in the States, with counsel & instruction concerning it forwarded to the Hawaiian Mission, its ultimate & ostensible form, & support was to be completed there, & it be carried on as the offspring of the Hawaiian Mission. A vital end to be gained by this new mission is its subjective, or reflex effect on the churches & mission at the S. Isles, in awakening & reawakening them to cooperation in evangelizing the world & thus save those churches & missionaries children from the ruin they will be led to by California gold.

To do this efficiently, the men should be sent out to the Hawaiian Mission (preceded by instructions) & be there taken up by the Hawaiian churches & mission & sent forward & supported by them & their contributions as an auxiliary Branch of the A. B. which will stand by with eyes ready to see, & hands ready to support them if they fail. If they stand & prosper, it will be a double glory to the A. B. if it introduces into the christian world, from heathenism a fellow laborer & auxiliary to the worlds convers

Pardon me if I allude again to the "Iron houses."

I hope they will not be dropped nor forgotten. Persons are still going to the "world's fair", who could make requisite inquiries.

If they the houses are feasible, they will be invaluable. I have watched & experimented in building materials in the Islands, & saw that a good house sometimes saves invaluable lives, & much waste of health & strength & misdirection of a missionary's effort. but a word to the wise is sufficient & I have now given two.

With the regards of Mrs. A. I remain

Yours truly

C. B. Andrews

10

Sudenville
May 5 ...

Rev. Rufus Anderson D.D.
Sec. of A.B.C.F.M.
Boston Ms.

Rev. C. B. Andrews,

Kinsman, O. May 1, 1851.

Recd. May 12,

~~Ans'd May 14~~

Ans'd May 28.

Jno Horner

Kinsman July 25th 1851.

Rev. & Dear Sir

I have delayed answering your last to await the result of the event anticipated in my last to you.

Mrs. Andrews was confined the 5th of June last, & gave birth to a son. He proves to be a very healthy child, but the mother though recovering slowly, is quite delicate.

I cannot yet tell whether it is the will of Providence to grant her sufficient strength & firmness of constitution to endure what it may be necessary to endure opening a new Mission to Micronesia. We are waiting hoping & expecting, but if our hopes in this respect are disappointed, we will have to interpret it as God's will & foreknowledge, that He does not intend to send salvation to that people by our instrumentality. A few months more will give more certainty. We hope to leave this for New England by the 1st of Sept. Would you deem it desirable for us to be present at the meeting of the Board?

I wish to present another item for your consideration. A cousin of mine now with us, brought up in my sister's family, is very desirous of going on a mission, & if possible, of going with *us* in that service, Even should Providence open up our way to Micronesia She is about 21 years of age, - has been for 18 months a member of the Pres. Ch. in Wayne Ashtabula Co. Ohio, has a peculiar *appropriateness* in making herself useful religiously, as well as in temporals, & has an admirable facility in adapting herself to any position in which

she may be called to act. From what I know of her I can say, she seems to have the elements of character which developed, may make of her a noble missionary lady.

From earliest years she has desired a place in doing good to the benighted, & she has suggested to Mrs. Andrews that if a few families go to Micronesia, there may be many, many places, in which, she, as a single lady may be a coworker in their usefulness, & add to their efficiency. Her name is Hannah Maria Reeve, the daughter of my mother's brother, but upon his death, adopted & brought up by my eldest sister.

The Pastor, elders & most of the chh. members of the church in Wayne, will give testimonials of her worth.

Allow me to inquire, if the Prudential Comttee would encourage her to go with us to the Pacific as above suggested. As there are only six weeks before we go East, an answer, as soon as convenient would be desirable.

With regards as ever, we remain

Yours most truly

C. B. Andrews

Rev. C. B. Andrews.

Kinsman, July 25, 1857

Rec'd. July 30/57

ans'd. July 31/57.

Kinsman Aug. 9th 1851.

Rev. & Dear Sir

Yours of July 31st I rec'd day before yesterday. Your opinion expressed concerning the improbability of Miss. Reeve's being accepted by the Prudent'l Comm'ee, because she is a single lady, did not disappoint me, but in reference to it, & the person, will you allow me to reply.

1st It was not a lightly made proposal. which I sent in regard to her, I had made it a subject of frequent presentation to the Ruler of Missions, to receive thence a correct judgment in regard to this matter,

2nd I was aware that the Prudent'l Com: discouraged the application of single ladies to be sent as Missionaries. The experiment has been tried in the Hawaiian Mission, largely; & now there are three out of the whole number who seem to be in the way. It is true that such persons outgrow their usefulness on Mission ground. The fixedness & habitual calculating for one's self, fallen into by persons without children is a serious & growing objection to a single missionary of either sex. But while I write this permit me to add, what Mrs. Hitchcock of Molokai has often told me, ~~the~~ in regard to one of them, that "were it not for Miss Brown's being with us, the station on Molokai must frequently have been given up entirely. Possibly the same may yet be said of some Station in Micronesia.

But I should never have mentioned Miss Reeve to you for acceptance as a missionary, had I not considered her an exception to single ladies generally, & their liabilities to outgrow their usefulness. I feel that her character & qualifications as a missionary are peculiar & superior enough for representation to the Committee.

1st They consist not in superior education. She has enjoyed but partial advantages in this respect. But her mind has developed almost precociously without them, or with the help of the few.

2nd She has a single-hearted devotedness to others good, with an almost faulty forgetfulness of self. The church to which she belongs feels as if she was their home missionary.

She has a felicity of manner in broaching the subject of religion & presenting it effectually & without offence even to the hardened, which I have seldom or ever seen before, but I have been constantly reminded by it of the character of Caroline Fry the Quaker-Philanthropist in England.

If I had the means, I would willingly meet her support, for the privilege of her assistance in missionary work, to myself & family. Mrs. Andrews is now enjoying material advantage from her, in learning vocal music in which she is an adept, & which is an invaluable requisite to a missionary among heathen.

I cannot write more except to add, that if we go to Micronesia, I fear we shall often, often regret,

the leaving behind us such an associate when she might have been permitted to go with us. If your Com.tee accede to our request. Both myself & Mrs. A. hope the "more advantageous circumstances" referred to by you, may not be found. & Miss Reeve herself has probably never thought that such "circumstances" will meet her there.

Please to answer this as soon as possible. as we only delay our journey East, to wait the result of this letter, & its answer must affect our own plans very much.

With regards from Mrs. A. & myself
we remain yours truly
O. B. Andrews

Rev. C. B. Andrews,
Kinsman, O. Aug. 9, 1851.

Recd. Aug. 14/51.

Ans. Augt. 20/51.

√ Per Pel. Ad

Proctorsville (Vt) Sept 23 1851.

Doct. Anderson

Rev. & Dear Sir.

You were so much engaged in General meeting of the Board in Portland, that I had to defer several things to communicate by letter, about which I wished to consult you there. The first was in relation to Miss Reeve of whom we corresponded before.

We waited for the answer of the Prudent. Comtte. until the last moment which we had given ourselves for staying in Ohio, but it came not. I knew not what to do next. My own judgment was convinced that God had given her an adaptedness to the work of missions, & withall a willingness to go. Consulting with the pastor of her church, & the members interested, they felt sure that she would be accepted by the Board, & advised me, if we must go, to take her with us, adding, that if she was not accepted, & she were still willing to go with us they, the church felt so much confidence in her, they would adopt her as their missionary, & though a feeble church, would do what they could for her support in whatever field we went.

After reflection & prayer to the God of missions, I concluded to do so, chiefly for the following reason, besides others before mentioned. Mrs. Andrews health, though improved, is anything but strong. It is the expectation of yourself & the Comtte. that we shall join the prospective Mission to Micronesia, if the way is opened for going there.

She is as willing in spirit to go & labor there as is any one with a reasonable prospect of health & life continued. But with a delicate constitution, & a babe to rear, she does not feel it to be judicious, (not to speak of comfort) to venture unassisted & alone upon the prospects of such a place, - & I honor her judgment.

To this I would add, that I value my wife too much, to hazard many risks of her separation from me & premature removal, even to a better world.

With these influencing me, I told Miss Reeve if she would trust the Lord & me for support, in case the Board would not support her as a Missionary, & would go with us thus, I would divide my last loaf with her, or between her & my wife. In the simplicity of faith she answered, she was willing to receive her support from whomsoever the Lord sent it. & came on with us.

Though your decision, (which was sent to us here,) was a disappointment, I do not regret the step taken. We did it in view of possible disappointment from the Board, feeling that the circumstances were ordered by the Lord, & that in this way only could we accomplish what is expected of us. But you will perceive that in arrangements for sailing, we shall need another berth engaged, the cost of which I will endeavor to meet myself.

Permit me to add, that if we go around Cape Horn, we must sail before the middle or last of November. I do not feel willing to try the "gulf stream" again in December, nor consequently Cape Horn & the Patagonian

coast in & after March. One experiment of that kind is satisfactory, much more now, that I have four to care for instead of one, during such a voyage. I have conversed with seafaring men, generally, & the united testimony of all in the whaling fleet is, that it is unsafe to cross the gulf stream after November. I presume that three sea-sicknesses which a passage to the Islands by the way of Panama & San Francisco, involves together with land travel across the isthmus, will be more undesirable for Mrs. A. & her babe, than ~~than~~ a steady sea voyage to the Islands, but I consider that the risk of life will not admit of choice between them, after November.

A matter of greater anxiety to me is, that Mrs. A's parents, & some of her brothers & sisters of whom I expected better things, object "in toto" to her going to Micronesia. They have assented to her going to the Sandwich Isles.

I feel that parents have a claim upon their children so long as they live. Existence & infant support are debts unpaid until death. If I cannot satisfy their minds so as to obtain a cheerful assent to go wherever God calls, what shall we do? You may have had similar cases to answer,

With regards we remain

Yours as Ever

C. B. Andrews

P. S. I open this to add that the account of "Wilkes Exploring Expedition with the Charts would be invaluable to the Micronesia Mission, the Charts being the only accurate ones of those Islands. — & as the proposed missionaries are the only American citizens there or to be there the U. S. Govt I have no doubt would furnish a copy in full free, upon application to the Sec. of the Navy" by either of you. C. B. A.

Rev. C. B. Andrews.

Proctorsville, Vt. Sep. , 1857

Recd Sep. 24. 1857.

Ansd Tuesday.

Pres. Recd Ansd

Proctorsville, Sept 27th 1851

Doct. Anderson

Rev. & Dear Sir.

Yours of the 24th came to hand last night. A reference to my last letter will show no reflection in it on either yourself or the Comttee whom you represent, for "unnecessary delay" in correspondence. Your correspondence with me has ever been prompt. The allusion to my not receiving an answer, before my time of leaving Ohio was to make clear my position & circumstances in connection with the views from which I acted.

A review of that letter will shew no expectation on my part, nor any desire that the subject of Miss. Reeve's going with us to the Pacific, would be brought again before the Prudentl Comttee; I hope at your next meeting with them, you will correct that mistake. Until then, I shall regret to have them suppose I thought so little of their intelligence & wisdom in deliberating, as to make a second application, with no new light added, for that which their judgment in council has refused.

The next item of your letter is left unintelligible, perhaps intentionally so, until explained "viva voce". I am aware that the Comttee are responsible to the churches, for the reproductive disbursement of their contributions. After I have taken ~~away~~ the necessity of such disbursement, no one of them will feel himself called upon to meddle with my private affairs, or to volunteer such interferance

with my family arrangements, as they would never allow in their own. especially after the member in question has commanded testimonials "very satisfactory" to them, enough so, to use your own language, to "supercede the necessity of personal interviews." Were any of the Com^tee or yourself to ~~take~~ take my place, such an one would consider himself best qualified to judge, or best able to find out, what the establishing & continuance of his wife's health needed, as well as how to arrange for their greatest efficiency & usefulness, especially if he had an acquaintance with the service & his field of labor.

It would be a matter of some delicacy for me to request testimonials from Mrs. Andrews acquaintance to be sent concerning her to the Prudent^l. Com^tee of the A.B. I gave you the names last year, of some of her acquaintences, who were patrons of the Board. If you have mislaid them, I will again refer you to Danl. A. Heald Esqr. Cash^r. of Black River Bank, Ludlow Vt. He is a warm friend of the Board, a christian, with whom Mrs. A. has lived. She spent a year also in the family of Rev. Danl. March, Nashua N. H. who married her elder sister.

Rev. L. H. Angier of Medford Mss. was her pastor & acquainted with her, while teaching in Mississippi. But you would obtain perhaps the most accurate account of her character, capacity & qualifications for a missionary from the Ag^t. of the A. Tract Soc. Rev. F. Y. Vail. & Mrs. Vail, in whose Seminary for young ladies she was teaching when I found her, & in which place, Walnut Hills Ohio, Rev. Prof. Allen

& lady of Lane Sem. became acquainted intimately with her. I presume the above names will be sufficient.

I am ready to converse freely with you about any matters desirable, & in accordance with your request will be in Boston on Thursday P.M. of next week, although for my own satisfaction, six cents postage would interchange communications much more explicit, definite & accurate than will conversation. The other points of your letter do not require immediate attention. I will therefore defer them to our meeting, until when,

I remain, Yours most truly,

C. B. Andrews

Missy of A.B.C.F.M.

Rev. C. B. Andrews.

Proctorsville, Feb. 27, 1857

Rec^d. Feb. 29/57.

Ver Rel. Card

Ver Dr. Pomeroy.

Proctorsville Oct. 6th 1851.

Doct. Anderson

Rev. & Dear Sir

Reflection upon the points reviewed by us has led me to the conclusion, that you might be right, & that I was like a business man, planning to meet & avert emergencies, which might not come. At least, it shows but little faith, that "God will provide a way of escape" from trouble & lead out of it when it comes, if I am so longsighted as to contrive means to meet & overcome them myself, when they are to come years ahead & on the opposite side of the globe.

I returned & laid our conversation together before Mrs. A. as graphically as I could. & the three alternatives, the Pacific by ourselves alone. Waiting here the result of her probation in Vermont or Ohio & the Western field farther on. Her answer was as grafic, after a few moments reflection, "I am bound for the Sandwich Islands or some other Mission field, & if the Board will not send us, we will go ourselves. Why I would have been there before I ever saw you, had my parents consented".

I would bespeak of you two things. 1st as comfortable & roomy & airy circumstances for a mother & her babe, on board ship as the case will admit of.

Proctorsville Oct. 6th 1851.

Doct. Anderson

Rev. & Dear Sir

Reflection upon the points reviewed by us has led me to the conclusion, that you might be right, & that I was like a business man, planning to meet & avert emergencies, which might not come. At least, it shews but little faith, that "God will provide a way of Escape" from trouble & lead out of it when it comes, if I am so longsighted as to contrive means to meet & overcome them myself, when they are to come years ahead & on the opposite side of the globe.

I returned & laid our conversation together before Mrs. A. as graphically as I could. & the three alternatives, the Pacific by ourselves alone, Waiting here the result of her probation in Vermont or Ohio & the Western field farther on. Her answer was as grafic, after a few moments reflection, "I am bound for the Sandwich Islands or some other mission field, & if the Board will not send us, we will go ourselves. Why I would have been there before I ever saw you, had my parents consented."

I would bespeak of you two things. 1st as comfortable & roomy & airy circumstances for a mother & her babe, on board ship as the case will admit of.

The 2nd was to enable me if possible to get Miss Reeve admitted to Mt Holyoke Seminary next year, but since writing the "2nd" she told me she would rather I would not trouble Doct A. on the subject.

I will forward the desired testimonials as soon as possible until which time

I remain as usual yours

O. B. Andrews

Rev. C. B. Andrews,

Proctorsville, Vt. Oct. 5, 1851.

Recd. Oct. 7th.

Ansd. Oct. 8th.

√ For Prud. Com.

ABC 19.1 v.14

Andrews, Claudius B.

50. A.L. to R. Anderson; 21 Nov 1852
51. A.L. to Provisional Cmtee for appropriating salaries; 22 May 1855

Andrews, Seth L.

52. A.L. to R. Anderson; 24 May 1847
53. Same; Sept 1848
54. Same; 11 May 1849

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

55. Same; 9 July 1848

Kaluaaha Nov. 29th 1852

Rev. & dear Sir,

Your letter of Aug. 9th calling for facts concerning the inconveniences of our situation, during our voyage on the "Esther May," recalls what I recollect, with thankfulness always, that it is past. Though having suffered from somebody's mismanagement, inclination ever to engage in what is present & to come, has led me to leave the complaining & rectifying of past evils to others.

But your letter calls for facts, & especially why the arrangement made in Boston for giving those in the forward room, their meals under deck by themselves, was not carried into effect. It was carried into effect for three days during which the weather was good, & most of us were sea sick. I mistake. After the 1st or 2nd day, there were so few to eat, that one table was not filled, & the few passengers below not too sea sick to eat, sat in the empty places around the table above.

When fairly in the "Gulf Stream" the 4th day after sailing, we had a terrific storm of 18 hours continuance, & the succeeding day was equally bad from the tossing of subsiding waves. The next 2 or 3 days were occupied by every well one on board, in taking care of the sick, & in righting, as fast as possible, the ruinous state in which every thing in the lower cabin had been mixed up in a destructive medley. No one thought of how they ate during that time.

Scarcely were things put to rights, when a 2nd storm on the 27th of Nov. came on us, & again we in the lower cabin were calked down under the hatches. This continued with some cessation until the 1st of Dec. when we began to breathe in calmer seas. But the two weeks spent thus, had developed our real situation, so that all of us, as well as the Capt. saw it would be utterly useless to try two tables again.

On the morn of the 3rd of Dec. the Capt. after consulting the passengers, gave us the following arrangement,

"The mates, carpenter, & what passengers were willing should

eat first in the middle cabin. The Capt. & remainder of the passengers should eat as soon after, as the Steward could prepare the 2nd table. During all weathers thenceforth, we went up to eat in the upper cabin. This of itself was no sad discomfort, except to the sick. We all bore it cheerfully. But an exponent of what caused it, will be an exponent of sufferings through that horrible voyage, to which we were subjected from the same causes that sent us all to eat up stairs at one table.

The first reason, evident to the Capt. & all of us after a 2 weeks' experience, why we must all eat in the upper cabin was,

Lack of sufficient help. We had but one steward on board, to prepare food for 40 persons & wait upon half of them, at 15 daily meals" each different & separate from the other, according to the subdivision prearranged in Boston, - & he must be waiter upon two tables in two different cabins, on separate floors, at one & the same time, - an impossibility in theory, which proved much more so in practice. Add to this the separate attention, cooking, & preparation of delicacies required of him by three invalids, Mr. Cuningham, Mrs. Paris & Miss Gilson, & Miss Judd the 4th invalid & two aged ladies Mrs. Judd & Mrs. Thurston, - his own wife whose life was one time despaired of on the voyage, - add also the great labor devolving on a steward of keeping clean the inhabited part of a ship, flooded often by an unusually stormy passage, ——— & you can perceive discomfort & suffering as the result, to which neither the owners nor our Prudent. Comtee. would be willing to subject either themselves or their families. The apology for a 2nd steward was the steward's wife, a woman in delicate health, who supposed herself enceinte, - had never been at sea, - was as helpless as passengers unused to sea life.

Had the cook been a person sufficient for his place, he could have helped the steward in his troubles but he proved to be, only an untrusty boy, & the steward had in fact to do the work of both. Another fact will have some bearing on this point. Conveniences of working save help. But the stove in our galley was so old, that

partitions between oven & the fire
the ~~[struck]~~ were burned through. Sending the ship to sea with an old stove was a piece of economy to the owners, which cost the passengers much.

The 2nd Reason alledged & most painfully felt by us all in other respects was, Lack of sufficient room.

Before two weeks of our voyage was past, the table below was covered with sails, & gear & the carpenter's clothes; under the table & on the seats ship stores, boxes & trunks were lashed; so that there was no place for food, for us to sit - or to put our feet while eating; & the Capt. said there was no other place to put the things there. We below thought when the Capt. arranged our eating above, that we should have the table below for reading & writing. But the Capt. told me he must have it to put things upon, for lack of other room, & the very first time after, that the mate came below to set in order things below, Dec. 27th he piled the muskets up on our table. Let me be alittle more cronological.

We were informed before chosing state rooms below, that the bulk-heads should be closed fore & aft & we should have a cabin below equal in pleasantness to that above. When Mr. Hunewell informed me this,* he shewed me a chart of the rooms below & Mr. Paris's name attached to one. I ~~know~~ thought Mr. Paris was too well acquainted with sea life to to chose unseamanlike accommodations & took it for granted that the promise was true. The carpenter who built the rooms below told me the same. But the day on which we made a feint of sailing, I wondered at the state of our promised cabin, & still more when we actually sailed, but knowing it was ship etiquette not to complain, & having other duties to do, I thought the carpenter would fulfil the promise after leaving port & things were straightened on board.

But the straightening told a different story. Not only were the bulkheads not closed, but casks of cheese, boxes of goods, barrels of potatoes, cabbage & other vegitables came aft into the cabin flush to the state room doors of myself & Mr. Wilcox, & piled up to the deck.

Under the stair way, at the head of our table lay a huge cask, containing all the bread for first use on the ship, & there was the only place on board left empty for it. Four days after sailing, it went

*Dr Gulick was told the same

dancing around our cabin (?) & fetching up with a crash, broke in the side of Dr. Gulick's state room. The aft bulkhead was closed as the forward one by stores of flour, fish & rice &c intruding forward into the promised cabin, flush to the aft end of the table.

Such was our cabin at starting, — but how was the practical operation? A barrel of beef is ordered, but the beef lay under a mass of stores, which must be strewed broad cast over our so called cabin. The next day a barrel of flour must be had. To get it, the stores aft of fish, rice, cordage & sails must be spread out over our cabin again. & it was only too easy to leave part of both fore & aft stores midway to save the trouble of breaking out again. After the first storms we respectfully solicited the Capt. to look into our abode & correct the difficulty.

He came down & saw, but said he could not remedy it, Stores must be broken out every day, & sometimes twice a day, & there was no other room left. He had himself remonstrated before sailing, against filling up thus all space, but to no purpose.

Mr. Hunnewell had proposed to him to put the stores on deck, but such a thing was out of the question.

We could say & do nothing more but had to make up our minds to endure as pleasantly as possible a steerage passage for the voyage. The spreading a table there was impossible. Do you ask why we did not appeal to our Supercargo?

The first things put upon the table were two of Mr. C's trunks lashed midway on the table. The Capt. had promised that after the new fore sail was finished & bent on, he would have things put in better order below. After waiting some weeks, until Dec. 2nd, Dr. G. Mr. Kittridge & myself, feeling we had a right to some cabin room, & disliking the filth of wet stuff rotting on the floor, piled some of the things back in their places, cleansed the floor & removed the scent of abounding rottenness. Among other things, I shifted the trunks so conspicuous on the middle of the table to the aft end & lashed them there with other trunks.

The next day Mr. C. accosted me, "Did you move my trunks from the place where they were lashed"?

"I put all the things on the table on the end aft, to give us a little cabin room."

"I wish, Mr. Andrews, that you would let my things alone."

"Pardon me, Mr Cunningham, your things shall be returned forthwith to the very spot whence they were taken". I went below & replaced them to his mind, determined not to quarrel with any one on ship board, but I felt that our Supercargo, who had a state room to himself, was the last person to whom to appeal, appropriating the lion's share of what room was available to us.

This lack of room was painfully felt in every part of the ship. The 2nd mate had to leave his room for Mr. Snow, & bunk in with the 1st mate, which made both grumble. The Capt. was persuaded to give up his room to the Judd family, & take the carpenter's room. This left the latter no place at all, so he went below & fitted up a hammock in the only clear place in our cabin below, & that was right over the table; where he actually slept, dressed, & undressed, & performed his other toilet duties all the voyage. The steward's room was vacated to accommodate Mrs. Thurston, & he with his wife & chattels I might add, filth, were stowed in with us below.

As we neared the Equator, our grocery began to give out its smells, but we had no one to clean the decaying matter away. On Saturday Dec. 13th we reached the Doldrums, & the stench increased so much that we ourselves set to work overhauling, & found cabbage overlying the barrels next the aft staterooms rotted into slush. On telling the Capt. he ordered it removed, but the mate said, It is too late, let it be until morning. Not wishing to breathe it longer, some of us got up & gathered as much as we could reach & threw it out upon deck the sight & smell of which set one mate to quarrel with the other for very shame, as he had pretended to clean out a few days before.

The next ~~day~~ morning Mrs. Gulick was rendered insensible for a long time by a convulsive fit, which she never suffered before or since.

Whether breathing the foul air had any part in causing it, I cannot say, Dr. G. could assign no other cause.

A leak some where let in water which collected into the rooms on the leeside. I pointed this out to the Capt. & once he ordered it sopped up. but what was once: I had to soak up water from our floor & that of Miss G's room every day for two thirds of our voyage & often twice & three a day. I felt it to be menial work which ought to have been done by the steward. but I had to sop up bilge water daily, to save my family from sickness. & my things from spoiling. As it was, Mrs. Andrews & Miss. Gilson suffered from rheumatism during the whole voyage, & the boards of our stateroom were rotted off at the bottom when we landed. They felt no more rheumatism a week after landing.

On the 17th of Dec. the 1st mate had a quarrel with a sailor, which resulted in the latter's being stowed down in our cabin.

We had borne illy with the carpenter's making even our grocery cabin his private apartment, but to have our ladies associated with the ship's criminals & prisoners, was an outrage, — to which however they had to submit for three days. Our cabin was the ship's prison, ship's grocery,- ship's & sail loft,- the carpenter's bed chamber. & the hospital for the stewardess, who had to occupy it thus for weeks. & with all this we must be our own scavengers. Three several times, as my journal of events reads, we below were driven by sheer necessity to make a job of overhauling, scraping up & washing out filthiness that had accumulated among the stores, barrels, & boxes littering up our steerage.

On the 9th of Jan. '52 as it was getting stormy in the high Southern latitude. The steward opened & lashed a barrel each of potatoes & mackerel at the head of the table, just between the staterooms of Miss. Gilson & Dr. Gulick. Codfish & cheese & pickles were standing open under the table aft, but the perfume of rotting potatoes & mackerel in the very middle of our cabin was very disagreeable. They stood there for two weeks, & were

removed elsewhere only at the repeated requests of passengers below. But their place was filled forthwith with all the bags of salt for use on the voyage, which constantly oozed out water — only it did not smell!

I will copy from my journal of Jan. 15th "Wind increased last night. For the last 3 days our cabin has been cluttered extra with ship stores, so that the only way we could get into our state rooms, is by clambering over cargo, ropes, stores &c. Our capt. said he would have the mackerel removed but it perfumes our apartments yet. I write holding my paper in my lap, — the only place left to each for writing. This taking cabin passage in the steerage looks even worse than it did when we started."

I might continue these notes & quotations but thus much will suffice. You can understand our situation on board the "Esther May." How thankful was I when my family were enlarged out of a situation unfit for them!

I felt a kind of self condemnation continually for having been the cause of their suffering in such circumstances, which was only aggravated by their tellingness in bearing its uncomplainingly.

God in his providence saw that the discipline of such circumstances for those months was needful for us, & therefore we complain not, but I have a continued, & an abiding feeling, of having led my wife unwittingly into a trap laid by others hands, where she & her sister, unused to such abuse, & sent by her father & friends as the last chance of saving life, — were kept sick & suffering, — when common decencies & helps, & proprieties of merchant vessels would have made the voyage comfortable to them. Our capt. was in like straitened circumstances with ourselves in one sense, i.e. he had to put our groceries & voyage necessities in the only place left to us, which was our promised cabin.

He saw & felt for our situation but could not have done much better for us without risking our living through the voyage.

I knew that that our passage was paid for properly by the Board, & Miss. Gilson's in full by her brother in Boston & that commercially we were entitled to a decent passage. I was used to sleeping on the mountains of Molokai & on canoes in the channels here,

& could put up with even steerage life, but for my wife nursing a babe, & her invalid sister, it was what, I pray may never ~~may~~ happen to them again.

This which I have written is enough. It is as plain & simple a statement of what we were sensible of in the senses of sight, taste, smell, & personal suffering as I can make. You may use it for what purpose or end you please. I know not how anything will conduce to quell the constant feeling that arises in my mind when I think of my family on the voyage, that we have been wronged.

Yours as ever
C. B. Andrews

Rev. C. B. Andrews,
Kalamazoo, Nov. 24, 1852
Recd. Feb. 19, 1853
Ansd. March 17/53
The Voyage out.

To the Provisional Committee for appropriating salaries & other expenditure of Missionaries of the A. Board.

Brethren,

The time & circumstances relating to the support of my family have come almost precisely as I foretold to you, at your last meeting in May 1854,

that is. I am without a house in which to put my family, & no means of supporting them by my labors as a minister.

Three years ago, when I returned to these islands from the States, I offered to go to the station now occupied by Mr. Paris, & live in the house formerly occupied successively by Messrs. Forbes, Ives, & Pogue. One motive I had for so doing, was to get a permanent location & at least a tolerable house in which to live, without being thrown back again onto the Board for house & support, when they would become restive & demur about the expense of the former.

But as you & the other members of the mission, in your wisdom placed me on Molokai to live in Mr. Hitchcock's house until he returned & I have been kept 3 years longer without a house or home, & my family is increasing, I most respectfully, but firmly

Mr. Andrews
Request.
1855.
Recd. Aug. 13/55
Ans. Dec. 14

request an appropriation for building a house.

I request it, in accordance with the rules of the A. Board, granting a house to every missionary of theirs in every land under the sun, & by virtue of which, each & every other one of you at these islands is provided with a house & a home;

I request it, none the less firmly, from having been kept a reserve man, a trotter as it were to fill temporary vacancies, until all of you are comfortably enjoying permanency each in his own premises. Have I forfeited the privilege by assenting to the wish of the Mission to live, a transient supply of another's vacancy until, the Home Missionary plan is adopted?

I request it the more firmly, from the fact that I have served the Board since 1844 at comparatively no expense to it.

My first outfit was a mere trifle. Before I had been here a year, the people of Molokai assumed my support, & as I was a boarder in the house of Mr. Hitchcock, I cost the Board nothing for house or support until I was transferred to Lahainaluna.

After residing there one year at no expense to the Board for a house, the Hawaiian

Gov.t assumed the expenses of that Institution. When I returned to the States, instead of drawing on the Board for my expenses there, I immediately entered upon preaching & teaching, by which I supported myself until my return hither.

My outfit again was less than 500. dollars. Since arriving here, I have only drawn from the Board 100 dollars each year, until this present time, & now I am teaching a. b. c. to Hawaiian children to earn bread for my own, without being being chargable to the Board.

A reference to the statistics of the treasury will show that, with a sum sufficient to build me a good house added to what the Board has already expended for my support, the amount will not equal that spent for any other mission family sustained eleven years by the Board at these Islands.

Although the Home missionary system has been adopted by the Board by which to recognise the future of your body, I cannot, by its rules & provisions for those transferred by it to this foreign land, either call myself a Home Missionary, or be treated as such, not having received either a house to live in, nor land, nor cattle, while I have as afore said been but little

chargable to the Board. I feel entitled to a house to live in, until the Board are ready to transfer me & my family to the place whence it took us.

The house I live in now was pronounced unsafe to live in 8 years ago by Mr. Gulick, Mr. Dwight patched it up & added to it so as to make it tenable, for the time but he left it last fall, taking with him the addition that he made, & he told me that it was unsafe to live in through another winter's storms. It has three rooms only all of which we have to occupy as bedrooms dining in one of them, while our natives sleep in & occupy the loft over our heads. I have spent 50 dollars to make it a place to stay in until we should learn your ~~mind~~ thought in regard to us. It was by your arrangement that we are left to this late hour without provision for a house, I have not the means to build myself. I am in the place assigned me by you in which to labor, I hear that Mr. Shipman is to go to Kau, while the Missionary sent by the Board to Hana has arrived for that station. If you have no place or labor for me that will warrant the expenditure for a house, we will most cheerfully accept a passage to our native land & exonerate the Board from further regard for us.

Yours most truly

Kaluaaha May 22/55

C. B. Andrews

Rec'd: C. B. Andrews
Kaluaaha, May 22, 1855.
Rec'd Aug. 13.

Letters from

Seth L. Andrews, M. D.

1847–1853.

Honolulu May 24 1847

Dear Sir

In my last, I gave you the intelligence of my deep affliction in my protracted ill health and the death of my beloved wife.

Since that period my health has slowly improved. I am however still feeble & unable to labor. I however do a little professionally, in the mission families, & give the brethren some aid in the way of advice, in the treatment sickness among the natives. I am able to ride out daily in a waggon, but riding on horseback has been injurious. I think I have reason to hope that my health will eventually be restored. Yet the process thus far has been so slow that at times I feel almost discouraged. Many of my brethren have urged upon me to take a voyage but there are some obstacles. Particularly my youngest

child now getting teeth. I feel un-willing to leave him at so critical a period. Still I may find such a course necessary, as our debilitating climate is not favorable to recovering lost vigor.

My children are in the family of my very kind associates, who ~~all~~ do all for them that can be done by any but a mother. I feel that I & they, have much to be thankful for that Providence has cast their lot in such a family.

One of your recent letters requests that individuals would give such statements in relation to our labors, as will in some measure fill the place of a general letter. I trust you will accept of an excuse from me, as my feeble health does not permit me to occupy much time in writing. And doubtless those who are in more active service will give you more valuable information.

I have now been spending some weeks at Punahou School, & would take this opportunity to express my

great satisfaction in witnessing the manner in which it is conducted.

The circumstances in which I am providentially placed will probably render a visit to the United States desirable. I have as yet however no definite plan. Probably some time during the next year. I wait the leading of Providence. Should I find it desirable to leave as early as next winter, if approved by my brethren, I trust I shall have also the approbation of the Committee.

We are truly happy to welcome Bro. Chamberlain back, & the more so, as it was scarcely hoped for, with improved health.

Mr. Thurston & family were in health when I last heard from them. I should perhaps except Thomas who was convalescing from an attack of dysentery.

With kindest regards I am

Your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

To

Rev. R. Anderson

Rev.d Seth L. Andrews.
Honolulu, May 24. 1847.
Rec.d Jan. 5. 1848.

Ans. Feb. 28.

per P. Cor.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston
Ms.
U. S. A.

NEW-YORK
JAN 4
2

53

Hilo, Sand. Isls. Sept. 1848

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Sec. of A. B. C. F. M.

Rev. & dear Sir,

The Bearer, S. L. Andrews M.D. having asked the sanction of this Mission to his proposition to visit the U. States with his little son, the only relic of his once happy family, we hereby assure him, & your Committee of our entire approval of his purpose. And we do most cordially & tenderly recommend him & his motherless boy to the confidence, the sympathies & the prayers of your much venerated Body, and of all the good. The history of the repeated and sore bereavements of this beloved Brother & fellow Laborer, we need not mention. You are already acquainted with the painful facts. You are also aware that our brother has, of a long time, been in a delicate & critical state of health, and although his health is much improved, yet he is still a valetudinarian. It is with pain that we

consent to part with our dear bro. not only on account of our personal & christian regards, but also from the fact that, during his absence, we have but one physician left for the whole mission.

Wishing him & yourselves the blessing of Almighty God, and praying that he may have a prosperous voyage to our native shores, be invigorated with renewed health &, in due time, be restored to us again,

I am, dear Sir,

On behalf of the S. I. mission,

Most truly & affectionately Yours,

Titus Coan } Committee

I. M. Nippin – Answering
Dr. Seth L. Andrews

Dear Sir
As you was not in Boston I neglected to leave this regarding it as rather a matter of form than importance, but as I am sending a package I include this.

S. L. A.

Ackd. Aug 11th

Nilo, Ap. – 1848

Recd. June 27/48

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Sec. of the A.B.C.F.M.
S. L. Andrews M.D. / Boston
U. States.

54

Ship Uncas N. Bedford
Harbor.
May 11 1849

Dear Sir

By the kind care of our heavenly Father I have been preserved through our long voyage & brought again in safety to my native land. We dropped anchor at 9 o'clock this eve three miles below the town.

Our passage has been somewhat stormy but in other respects pleasant.

I have to acknowledge with gratitude the constant kindness & attention of Capt. Gillette & Lady as well as of all around me.

No pains have been spared to make my situation pleasant & comfortable.

My son George who accompanies me has in general enjoyed good health with the exception of whooping cough & measles which he took just before leaving Honolulu. From the cough he has not fully recovered. His general health however is good & he has gained in flesh & stature during the voyage.

My own health is comfortable although I am still an invalid. Perhaps I have improved somewhat by the voyage. I have recently suffered from a feverish attack which confined me for a week, I have now fully re=

covered from it & hope I am in some respects better than before.

I regret to learn from Mr Russel that you are in feeble health. I trust you may soon be restored, may our heavenly Father grant to you this blessing, & in sickness or health his presence.

Excuse this hasty scrawl, it is past eleven o'clock & I feel the need of rest.

Mr. R. goes early in the morn.

Very truly yours in the
Bonds of the gospel
Seth L. Andrews

P. S. I shall not be able to leave N. B. this week, but if the Lord will I propose to go to Boston on Tuesday or Wednesday.

S. L. A.

Wm L. Andrews M.D.
Sends list

New Bedford

May 11. 1849
Rec. " 14. "

55 (1849)

Putney Vt. July 9 1848

Dear Sir

I was glad to learn from Mr. Worcester that you had returned to Boston with somewhat improved health. I hope that with so much of you disease remaining (If I understood Mr. W. you are not entirely relieved) you may not be tempted by the pressure of business to go beyond your strength, & induce a speedy return of your infirmity in its original or greater violence.

Since I was in Boston I have spent most of my time in Mass. & Con. My son has been ill from a cold three times so as at times to be quite confined to his bed. ~~&~~ His illness has delayed my progress, as also some poor days in my own health, so late in the season that the cholera has made its appearance all along the route I should travel to reach my friends in Mich. I was nevertheless intending & yet with some misgivings to go on until Mr. Worcester inquired whether it was prudent for me to do so. At Mr. W's suggestion I

I have reconsidered the matter, consulting some friends & physicians one of whom had just returned from a journey to Detroit. The result is that I have come to my native place expecting to remain until the hot season has passed. My disease is a chronic diarrhoea which would naturally predispose me to cholera if exposed to ~~a~~ its contagion, or whatever produces it. So many instances occur of travellers cut down by it, that with my feeble health I should have felt as if running the gauntlet all the way from Albany to ~~Buffalo~~ Detroit. Aside from the Cholera I am inclined to think the pure air of Vt. may be better for me than that of Mich.

I learned from Mr. W. that letters have been recently rec^d. from the Isls & that three families have been bereaved of little ones, viz Mr. L. Smith, & Doct. Smith. the third he did not remember. will you have the goodness to inform me when you have time. Have you any tidings of Mr. I's state of health?

Should any letters be rec^d. at the rooms for me please forward them to this place until further notice. ~~I should be glad to [illegible] the Herald & Day Spring.~~

Do you know where Mr. Forbes is located?
My health is comfortable, but much as it has been for months past. I think journeying was not beneficial, what rest among my native hills will do remains to be seen, as I have been here but a few days.

George, my son, has recovered from his illness except that he still coughs occasionally, but diminishing.

Mr. Worcester informed me that it had been proposed to the mission to adopt a new course which should tend to self support or to drawing support from the people & that a special meeting of the mission was to be called in relation to that subject. I had not opportunity to learn anything more from Mr. W. in relation to it, & if you can at any time find leisure to write me briefly in relation to it I shall esteem it a favor.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

Dr. Seth L. Andrews.

Putney, Vt. July 9, 1849.

Recd. July 13.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston
Mass.

11 1/2

PUTNEY

ABC 19.1 v.14
Andrews, Seth L
56. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 Oct 1849
57. Same; 28 Aug 1850
58. Same; 15 Oct 1850
59. Same; 4 Nov 1850
60. Same; 30 Jan 1851
61. Same; 18 Feb 1851
62. A.L. to D. Greene; 21 Feb 1851
THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Armada Macomb Co. Mich.
Oct. 10th 1849

Dear Sir

I have the pleasure to inform you of my safe arrival at my father's house. By the good hand of God upon me I have been brought safely on my way & have been permitted to meet my friends in usual health. My own health has been better for a month past than during the summer. My Son has since leaving Pittsfield enjoyed better health than usual until ~~we~~ a few days since he was attacked ~~by~~ with an eruptive disease attended with some fever. He is now apparently convalescent.

Will you have the goodness to send me the Annual Report, when issued. If sent to your agent at Detroit I can obtain it without expense, & will send for it there.

Should any packages of papers be sent me from the Isls. they may be sent in the same way.

Letters unless too numerous I would like by mail. Should a considerable number come to hand please select as many as will come within the 1/2 oz. & let the others come with the packages.

If you are able among so many correspondents to recognise Mr. Thurston's hand, please send his by mail.

Please forward this letter to Mr. Wilcox & via Panama.

Respectfully Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

To
Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

Dr. S. L. Andrews,

Armada, Mich. Oct. 10/49

Recd. Oct. 17.

✓ Report, &c.

✓ His letter

Armada Aug. 28th 1850

Dear Sir

I have for many months neglected to report myself to the committee having little to communicate. I have now however by the blessing of God so far recovered my health that it seems duty to inquire what the Lord would have me to do. I trust it has been good for me that I have been afflicted, & would bless the hand that has inflicted strokes infinitely short of my deserts.

I ought perhaps to give some account of the year past. After leaving Boston in May 1849, I spent the summer in New. Eng. mostly in Vermont, my health continuing much as when I arrived in this country. After the meeting of the Board at Pittsfield I came to this state. The journey & the approach of cool weather ~~affected~~ ~~to~~ affected me favorably, & since that time have gradually but very slowly improved. The diarrhoea

which so long prostrated my strength, has been checked, & although I have still occasionally some ~~times~~ very slight symptoms of remaining weakness, I have been able for many weeks entirely to dispense with the use of medicines to which I had been obliged to resort daily for years. My strength has not fully returned but, I am able to walk several miles daily if need be, & to labor in the garden & on the farm to some extent. Should the amendment continue, as there seems every reason to expect, I think, that ~~as the climate of the Islands are not peculiarly to~~ as residents at the Isls. are not peculiarly subject to such complaints, I shall be able to return with a prospect of retaining my health. I do not however think it would be wise for me return this fall, but to remain here for the invigorating effect of another cold season.

Should my expectations be realized I shall desire, at such season as may seem best, after the coming winter to return the Islands, should the committee feel willing to send me back.

I shall be glad to know your views upon this subject as soon as convenient,

as it will be desirable for me to take some steps towards a preparation.

If after learning ~~the~~ my prospects as to health, the Committee shall decide to permit me to return, I shall be very desirous of visiting the East, for the purpose of attending Medical Lectures in New York that I may go back somewhat improved in my profession, & better prepared to afford relief to the afflicted.

I have another object ~~to~~ in view in this visit, & that is to seek a lady who will be willing to accompany me on my return. I think there is no prospect of securing a suitable companion in this region.

Should the Committee consent to this visit, I shall be obliged to call for funds for the expense of the journey & of the residence in N. York. And to avoid the expense of further correspondence I will request you to ~~the~~ make the necessary statement to Mr. Hill & request him to forward me an order on Mr. Brigham

Mr. Hill

at Detroit for $ sixty dollars for travelling expenses

& some necessary outfit.

I have stated in brief what seems to me the best course for the fall & winter & shall be obliged to you for any suggestions affecting my course.

I have recently rec^d. a letter from Mr. Tomlinson respecting a box, I left ~~the~~ in his charge. It contains articles that I shall need for the voyage if I return, & do not need them here; ~~[illegible]~~ It would therefore be a useless expense to send them here as he suggests. Will you have the goodness to make such statement to him which will save another letter.

Some months since I observed in the papers a notice of your bereavement, in the death of your daughter. In this affliction I can sympathise with you, I think, as only those can who have known such depths of sorrow. I rejoice too with you that you mourn, not without hope, but ~~that~~ with a good hope of meeting her again where you will see her free from all the sorrows of earth & to part no more forever.

Very truly your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

To Rev. R. Anderson

P. S. I should like to go East before the stormy season commences on the lake, not later than early in Oct. I may however be detained later.

Dr. S. L. Andrews [illegible] 1853 [illegible]

Mr. [illegible]

58

Armada Oct. 1st 1850

Dear Sir

I have the pleasure to acknowledge the receipt of your favor of   and inclosed draft of sixty dollars from Mr. Hill.

Accept for yourself & the Board my thanks for this assistance in the preparation for the work.

Your advice upon the point of health is in accordance with my own views & will I hope lead me to greater care on that point. I have with you wondered that it is so often overlooked.

May I be allowed to make a suggestion in relation to a successor for Mr. Wells who I am informed intends to resign his post as Dist. Sec.? If you have no one in view I think Rev. Forbes would ~~make an~~ be an excellent man for the office, if he can be obtained.

He is gentlemanly & winning in his manners, has a sufficient degree of eloquence, & is I think, a systematic business man, & withal a warm hearted christian.

I do not know whether he is at present favorably located for educating his children, but if he is not you may by giving him the appointment do him a favor, as by settling at Ann Arbor which would be a sufficiently central point, he would able to ~~edu~~ enjoy the advantage of good schools & of the University. In the latter no tuition is charged, except a matriculation fee of $. 10.

Mr. F. is now at Rural Valley Penn about 12 miles northeast from Kittaning

Affectionately your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

To Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

P. S. I was during nearly my whole residence at the Isls more intimate with Bro. Forbes than any other except our immediate associates & had abundant opportunity to know his character & habits. I mention this that you may know what opportunity I have enjoyed to know him.

S. L. A.

Dr. Seth L. Andrews.

Armada, Mich. Oct. 15/50

Rec'd. Oct. 22/50

Mr. Herbert – for Dr. P.

Pittsford Nov. 4 1850

Dear Sir

I wrote to you a few weeks since from Armada acknowledging the receipt of yours. Since that time I have rec^d. intelligence which may make a modification of my plans desirable. A lady has been recommended to me as suitable for a companion & who has resided in this state but has gone to Philadelphia to spend the winter. I shall soon have opportunity to make further inquiries respecting her & if present impressions are confirmed shall wish to visit Phil. & perhaps attend lectures there instead of at N.Y. — I think a phrenologist would find caution large in my head, & hence I can't make up my mind to enter into the marriage relation with any lady until I have an opportunity for personal acquaintance. I have committed the matter to the Lord from the first & feeling it safe in his hands had little anxiety for the result, but still regard it an imperious duty to use all suitable means to know where duty leads, that I be not found tempting my Lord instead of following his guidance.

Nw

Oct. 12th I have had some further opportunities to make inquiries respecting the lady alluded to above, but do not yet feel prepared to decide upon my course. I propose to visit some friends this week & be in N. York about its close or early next week.

Presuming there would be no objection to my making Philadelphia my residence instead of N.Y. I solicit your acquiescence & such arrangement as may be necessary to defray my expenses there.

Please write me at N.Y. to the care of Mr. Merwin.

Remember me in your prayers that he who sees the end from the beginning may be my guide.

Very truly your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

Dr. S. L. Andrews,

Pittsford, Nov. 4, 1850.

Recd. Nov. 14, 1850.

Ansd. Nov. 16,

New York Jan. 30th 1851

Dear Sir

I came to this city soon after the date of my last to you & have spent my time here until now. I did not go to Philadelphia, as I then thought might be desirable, as the lady to whom I alluded appeared to me, after careful inquiry, not to have sufficiently firm health, although in every other respect ~~as~~ such as I could wish, or at least as nearly so as I could reasonably expect to find any lady.

Although I have not been idle I am as yet apparently no nearer the accomplishment of my object than six months ago.

I have found my residence here very pleasant, & profitable. My opportunities for improvement in my profession have been good, & to learn

more fully than ~~I have~~ the little time I have been able to devote to study has enabled me to do, the improvements which have been made in medical science & the light which has been thrown upon some of its collateral branches, has been very interesting to me, a continual feast.

But I took up my pen mainly to request your approval ~~to~~ of the purchase of microscope.

My glimpses through various mediums of the important part which that instrument has for some years performed in promoting the advance of medical knowledge, has often tempted me to wish myself the possessor of one, but its great expense has hitherto deterred me from asking it. The advantages I have enjoyed this winter of learning more fully its value has satisfied me of its propriety.

The instrument is often of value in the diagnosis of diseases, in other respects an important assistant to the physician in the ordinary pursuit of his professional duties. It is also of great value

in acquiring & maintaining that knowledge of the human frame so important to skill in our profession.

There are some additional reasons I might offer not directly connected with my profession. I think I can make the instrument very useful as a means of instruction to our children in the mission school,* & in families. It will afford the same advantages for the natives, & assist much to enlarge the minds of those who may enjoy its advantages, by the wonders it reveals of the wonderful perfection of the minutest of God's works.

Should, as I hope will soon be the case, some native youth be found prepared to enter upon the study of the medical profession, it will be of the utmost importance to them.

I might enlarge upon these & other reasons but will not encroach upon your time.

Perhaps it may not be amiss to add that I have consulted Prof. Clarke, than whom no man is better qualified to express an opinion upon the subject, & was glad to find that

* that if the school may [illegible] supplied with one.

~~th~~ his views corresponded entirely with my own.

The expense of an instruments, adequate to my wants, will be about one hundred dollars, perhaps a few dollars more or less.

Should you approve of the expenditure I should be glad to make the purchase immediately, as Prof. Clarke kindly offers to assist me in the selection, & I shall have some opportunity to obtain instruction in its use, obtaining from the experience of others what I should else have to work out most slowly, by my own unaided ingenuity.

My health has been for the most part comfortable although I suffered two attacks not serious of my old complaint.

This cold day braces me up, & ~~my~~ walks to day in this cold, & to me exhilirating air, have been delightful.

Very truly your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

Direct to 101 East Broadway

Dr. S. L. Andrews.
N.Y. Jan. 30. 1857
Rec. Feb. 1
Ans. [illegible]
[illegible]

New York Feb. 18th 1851

Dear Sir

I had the pleasure to receive your favor in reply to my last in due season.

I am not disposed to urge the subject of the instrument for which I asked more than I think its importance demands, but having made myself better acquainted with the prices of microscopes I wish to say a few words, & should the Committee still think the instrument for which I ask too expensive I shall cheerfully accede to their decision, hoping however that they will at the least add something to the sum named in your last, whatever they think justifiable.

My reason for asking for an instrument of ~~so~~ so much power I think I did not mention as I should have done, as a smaller one answers for many, perhaps most purposes, very well. But I am isolated from all access to such instruments in the hands of others. Mine will probably be the only one of value at the Isl. Here a man who has none or who has one of inferior power takes his object to Prof. Clarke or other gent. who has half a dozen, & of the highest powers.
The instrument purchased for Amherst college I suppose to be merely for the use of the lecture room, & although such an one will give more interesting results, still one of half its power would answer equally well the end, which is to illustrate philosophical principles. Perhaps however I limit its use too much, when I penned the last sentence I was thinking of the usual experiments in Nat. Philosophy. They may & probably have lectures upon some branches of Nat. Science where even a much more powerful instrument

would be exceedingly interesting & useful to a class. I withdraw that remark.

When I wrote I had in view instruments which cost not far from $.100.00 An optician here has a very good instrument of which the price is $.90.00 Upon my informing him of the object of the purchase, & my connection with the Board he at once said that he would make a deduction, & offers it at $.75.00 He has instruments much more expensive, & of all prices below that named.

The instrument named at $.75.00 I think not better than is exceedingly desirable and important in my circumstances, but whether sufficiently so as to justify the expenditure I shall, submitting the above thoughts, cheerfully leave to the Committee to decide.

Respectfully Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

To Rev.
R. Anderson D.D.

P. S. If the importer makes much profit upon his instrument, one which costs $.20. in Paris could not be sold here for $. 30.00, as the duties are 20 pr. cent. add to which cost of transportation & it will leave small profit. A physician here has one which he purchased in Paris for $ 30.00 but as it was not ready, he left it to come after; the duties & transportation made the cost to him here over $. 43.00, as he informed me.

Seth S. Andrews

S. S. Andrews.
New York, Feb. 18/57
Recd. Feb. 20/57.
Ansd. Feb. 20.

New York Feb. 21st 1851

Mr D. Greene
Dear Sir

This tract containing the memoirs of Bartimeus the Blind Preacher of the Sand. Isls by Bro. Green was sent by when I left the Isls. but was overlooked when I was in Boston. As I presumed you would not read it much I thought it not necessary to send it by mail from Michigan & hence I have retained it until now.

Excuse my carelessness.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

Dr. Seth L. Andrews

New York City, Feb. 21/57

Rec'd. Feb. 28/57

no answer needed

Rev. D. Greene

ABC 19.1 v.14
Andrews, Seth L.
63. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 May 1851
64. Same; 12 June 1851
65. Same; 26 June 1851
66. Same; 8 Oct 1851
67. Same; 13 Oct 1851
68. Same; 7 Feb 1852
69. Same; 9 Feb 1852
THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

New York May 10 1851

Dear Sir

Mr Paris & myself have had some conversation in relation to a return to the Islands via Panama, & would be glad to know your views upon the Subject. Mr. A. G. Benson assured me last eve that he could procure my passage to San Francisco for $200. that he had sufficient influence with the company to induce them to reduce the fare to that sum in favor of the Board. A friend of Mr. Paris' is confident that by fall the expenses will be so reduced that a passage via San F. will cost little more than via Cape Horn. The gentleman has business connections which enables him to know well the state of affairs.

It appears to us that if we can go that way at an expense not very much greater than by the other rout, it is most desirable that we should do so, saving that long stormy

passage around the cape. The saving of time will be at least half of a *short* passage via the cape, & ~~and~~ two thirds of some direct passages, as of the Mary, a merchant ship, 180 days.

Besides the saving in time & comfort it will afford me some relief to feel that I can have until January to finish my yet unsettled business. I know not how my present plans will terminate & begin to feel that the time is short to accomplish such a business & other affairs before October.

Dr. Gulick is no better off than myself. Should there be any prospect that the Committee will favor our views we will endeavour to ascertain more definitely what terms can be obtained. Will you have the goodness to reply as early as convenient.

With kind regards from Mr. Paris & myself I am yours

Seth L. Andrews

To

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

P.S. I suppose the passage from San F. will not be more than $. 50.00. Mr. Paris thinks not more than $. 30.00.

Dr. S. L. Andrews,

New York, May 10, 1851

Recd. May 12,

Ans. May 14.

S. Van Rensselaer

Newark June 12 1851

Dear Sir

You will remember that I spoke of a lady whose character I was studying when I last saw you. I have been very fully satisfied as to her qualifications & have brought the subject before her. She seems to have no personal objections, has her whole soul enlisted in the work & would gladly go to the worlds end, yet there are obstacles which I much fear will prove insuperable.

Dr. Condit has very kindly interested himself for me & is doing all in his power to favor my cause. I hope before the week closes to know whether the obstacles ~~[illegible]~~ are insuperable. If I fail in this suit, I feel inclined to go immediately to my friends at the West. Providence may prepare the way for me in that direction, or if not I shall wish to return in

Sept. perhaps, for a fresh search.
Is there any objection to such a course?
If you can give me any advice upon
the subject I shall be glad to re-
ceive it.

Please write by return of mail if
possible, & direct to 150 Nassau St. care of
Mr. Merwin.

Very truly yours
Seth L. Andrews

Rev. R. Anderson

Seth L. Andrews, M.D.,

New York, June 12, 1857

Recd. June 16 —

Ansd. June 16

P. S. Would it not be for the good of the cause to send Bro. Wood to Mich for a few weeks if he can go? Very few missionaries have visited the Mich. churches, & I think his labors might stir them up to love & good works. It seems to me especially

Saratoga June 26th 1857

Rev. R. Anderson
Dear Sir

Your favor in reply to my last was duly rec'd at N. York.

My affair at Newark terminated as I feared when I wrote. Filial duty alone, I think prevented my success. The lady is most ardently desirous ~~of~~ to go abroad, & I think nothing would rejoice her more than ~~as a missionary~~ to be able to do so with the feeling that she was in the path of duty.

I have commenced my journey westward in pursuance of the plan mentioned in my last, & exploring as I go. Mean time I wish to make inquiries about a lady to whom I was introduced by Mrs. Armstrong at Orange. She is Miss Means, a sister of the wife Rev. Mr. Adams, a teacher at O.

desirable just now as I suppose you have no agent in field since Mr. W. left. S. L. A.

My interview of half an hour gave me a very favorable impression. Mrs. A. speaks highly of her. Another lady who has recently become acquainted spoke well of her so far as her own acquaintance went, adding that every where she visited she heard the praises of Miss. M.

As She is from Mass. I suppose it not improbable that you may know her, or may have access to those who do. She has a 2nd brother who is a clergyman & teaching in Mass. but I do not know where. I could learn nothing of her early history.

Mr. Moors of Groton 2

I am unwilling to move in such an affair until fully satisfied as to her fitness, & where I can have so little opportunity for acquaintance, I must make up for the deficiency as well as I can by the testimony of others & do not feel willing to act upon the opinion of one or two with whom I have but slight acquaintance. If you know anything of her or can gain information from any reliable source you will much oblige me. I wish to know as to her piety, disposition, health, education, & domestic qualifications. As aid in judging of her qualifications I should be glad to know something of her early history. What of her parents especially the mother, & particularly as to the points mentioned above? They are both dead. Is there any tendency to pulmonary consumption hereditary in the family? Such constitutions in many cases do not bear the care & labor of a missionary well. Is there any tendency to lunacy in the family? I see so many such families & a recent narrow escape leads me to look at that point. I was making arrangements to seek the acquaintance of a lady who was highly recommended to me, when ~~at~~ another person not knowing that I had ever heard of her, mentioned her in terms of commendation, but added, that the only objection was a tendency to lunacy hereditary in the family. The person who first mentioned her did not know ~~them~~ the family & I presume was entirely ignorant of the fact.

Schenectady. Eve. I hoped to have obtained some further knowledge of Miss M. this day but failed. An acquaintance who I hoped might know her could give me no information.

I however learned that Mr. Adams formerly taught Byfield Academy in Ms. If you have any knowledge of the family what I have given will be sufficient to designate them. Miss M. is probably about 30 yrs old.

I have been much mortified by a piece of carelessness I committed while at Albany. I wrote a letter similar in contents to this. I wrote it in the sitting room of the Delavan house & as my trunk was not at hand put it in my pocket, from which it dropped in the street perhaps, I know not where. It was in an envelope & directed in full to you, but fortunately had not my name as it was unfinished. I mention it as possibly it may have fallen into the hands of some one who will drop it in the P.O. & you rec. an anonymous letter. You would know the writer doubtless, but wonder at such an unfinished letter. & perhaps you will wonder yet more at my carelessness, but not more than I have done.

Very truly yours

Seth L. Andrews

Direct to Armada Macomb Co. Mich.

Dr. Seth L. Andrews
Saratoga June 26/57
Rec'd July 1/57

Newark Oct. 8th 1851

Dear Sir

My expectations in this quarter have been disappointed, & as yet I know not where to look next. It is useless for me to think of being ready to sail in four or five weeks & the lady yet to be found. Could I immediately secure the consent of some one already known I could be ready, but for a new acquaintance I must have time, & when I have become satisfied, the lady must have time.

And now is there any prospect of a ship a few months later? If so I may possibly be ready. If not what next? I wish to return, but am unwilling to do so without a wife. If my failure of success is an indication of Providence that such is not the path of duty I will acquiesce. If it is designed for a trial of my faith & patience, or in any other way as a discipline from my Father in heaven

I wish to be guided in the path of duty. How to decide that point I know not. I am I have felt that it would be my duty to return & am reluctant to come to a different conclusion, yet if I know my own heart I have no wish to act otherwise than according to the will of my Father in heaven.

Perhaps the course which occurs to me as proper may be best. I would continue my efforts if there is any probability of an opportunity to sail this season while such probability exists. If I fail, ought I to spend any more time as I have done the last few months? I think not, & that I should return to my friends in Mich. & watch what the Lord will do for me. If he points me to a field of usefulness I will look at it & embrace it if it seems the path of duty. Or, if the way should be open for my return during the ensuing year I shall gladly do it.

Pray for me that I may be guided in the way the Lord would have me to go.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

Dr. S. L. Andrews.

New Ark, N. J. Oct. 8/57

Recd. Oct. 9/57

Ans. Oct. 15th.

Pub. Card

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary House
Ashburton Square
Boston
Mass.

NE[illegible] N.J.

New York Oct. 13 1851

Rev. R. Anderson

Dear Sir

Bro Paris has told me of a lady who wished to go out in company with Bro. C. B. Andrews & lady, & who might perhaps be suitable for me. Do you know enough of her to give me any definite information as to her age, health, education, refinement &c. &c.? I ~~may~~ need not perhaps add piety as that of course is the first qualification. If there is any prospect that she is such a one as I wish, ~~will~~ do you know whether she is still in Vt.? If so, in what place? Neither Bro. P. or myself can remember where Bro. A. is.

If he is still with Bro. A. I call upon him & have some opportunity to make acquaintance before my object can be suspected, especially as I am Vermonter & should have a good excuse for going there.

A friend has suggested that Cincinati in Ohio would be a promising place, & that Mr. Weed would probably be able to direct me. Is Mr. Weed a man in whom I can confide safely in such a matter?

Bro Gulick has at length succeeded in securing a companion & is quite happy in his prospects. I have not seen the lady but believe from the testimony of others that he has found a wife from the Lord.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews.

P. S. I wrote from Newark a few days since & carelessly neglected to say that I should return immediately to N. Y.
S. L. A.

Dr. S. L. Andrews,

New York, Oct. 13, 1857

Rec. Oct. 16.

Ansd. Oct. 18.

Armada Feb. 7th 1852

Rev. R. Anderson

Dear Sir

I rec'd your letters, of 15 & 16 ult. last eve. on my arrival at this place.

You will ere this reaches you receive one from me dated Cincinnati, giving ~~a~~ the result of my successful effort there.

I have as much as you can do regretted my long delay, yet it seems to me that I have done all that I could do for the accomplishment of my object. I have previously made proposals for an acquaintance or of marriage to four ladies which have been unsuccessful. There has been no time or rather but very little time during two years past that I have not had before my mind some one whose qualifications I have made ~~a~~ ~~object~~ a subject of attention as assiduously

as circumstances would permit. When I went East I did not intend to spend many weeks, & especially after my conversation with you, but several individuals were brought before me providentially & I was delayed until Miss Dike was mentioned in such favorable terms, giving so much reason to hope for success, that it seemed to me duty to pursue the subject. I was unwilling to go Cincinnati until I could obtain as much knowledge of her as possible without personal acquaintance, & to accomplish this, unexpectedly & owing to circumstances beyond my control, occupied several weeks; the circumstances I would give but ~~it~~ would take too much time & space for this letter. ~~[illegible]~~ I must upon giving up my search, come west & my plan was if I failed at C. to pursue my journey to this place & try to find what the Lord would have me do here. Cincinnati was not very much out of my way.

I was called from N.Y. suddenly by the illness of my father & at ~~Cincinnati~~ Cleveland rec. intelligence of his death. As I could then do no good by hastening

home, I turned to my previous plan of visiting Cincinnati, & the result you know. Has not our Father in heaven so ordered it that ~~it~~ I should receive neither of your letters which would of course have stopped my action, at least without further correspondence with you, until the arrangement was completed. I did not express all that I felt in relation to Miss D.'s qualifications, you might have thought me partial had I done so. You will receive from those who have known her well, testimonials. In addition to sound, active piety & sufficient education amiable disposition she is said & my own observation confirms ~~it~~ it to be possessed of the best sound, practical common sense. She is possessed of a person indicating strength of constitution, & her health is as good as I should expect to find were I to search for years. ~~Mr~~ ~~Mr.~~ Vail in a letter before me remarks — "As you know that of the very few willing to go, none of them are perfect — as none of the gentlemen desiring companions are perfect, my judgement has been that where that where a good looking,

amiable, pious, conscientious, intelligent female, & especially one that a very judicious & godly minister of the gospel could respect love, & confide in for six years (as was the fact with Miss D's pledged companion#) is willing to give herself to the great missionary work & become the mother of a child not her own, there is a providential indication that God has chosen her for yours almost as plainly as that God had furnished a Rebecca for Isaac.

Miss D. is of a very suitable age for me, 36 yrs. & one of ~~the~~ my troubles has been that ladies who seemed in other respects suitable have been too young, for I could not ~~not~~ think of marrying a lady 20 yrs younger than myself.

One fact perhaps I ought to have mentioned before, although I then thought it unnecessary. ~~then~~. Miss D. was some years ago deranged for a few months. She has been entirely free from it since, & as I remarked is distinguished for good sound common sense. With my knowledge of her, I have little fear of its recurrence.

It has been trying to my feelings to ~~be~~ be obliged to draw so much of the funds of the Board & I have endeavoured to

\# He died five years since.

use what I have drawn economically. If in this I have failed I sincerely regret it, but ~~I~~ I do not think that I have done so.

I shall make no further move until I hear from you. But in case the Committee approve of my doings, & my return to the Ids. my plan is this. Miss D. is without a home as that of her father is rendered unpleasant by a step-mother. We wish therefore to be united soon, & after a brief visit to her father in the N. E. part of Ill. she will ~~with~~ remain with me at my mother's until there is opportunity to sail. There will be no expense to the Board beyond travelling expenses which I shall as I have always done make as economical as I can. We shall wish to have sufficient notice of the time of sailing to visit some friends at the East.

I most earnestly hope that there will now be no objection to my returning although, as I suppose is the fact, there will be no immediate

opportunity. It seems to me that I may, especially with such a companion as Miss D. be more useful there than here. I have acquired the language, & I think confidence & affections of the Hawaiians, & of my brethren & sisters in the mission. You perhaps may know the feelings of the latter better than myself, but some have expressed their feelings to me freely, & of others I judge by their manner towards me.

I have endeavoured from the first to commit my way to the Lord, & constantly with prayers & tears I have sought his guidance. I think I have been guided by Him, & I pray that he may guide you & the Committee to such a result as he will approve & bless.

It may not be amiss to say that I think that God has brought about one good result from my protracted search for a wife. The travel & change of scene have been constantly beneficial to my health, & I am now very very far better prepared in that respect to return than I should have been a year ago.

I do not know but I may have appeared to lookers on as inactive during

some part of the year past, but my business was one which could not consistently be carried on in a manner that those about could know how much I was doing. I have endeavoured to be faithful in my efforts & in looking back it appears to me that I have been so. None one but myself can know how much effort I have made & the trial I have endured.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

P. S. Perhaps my apologies are uncalled for, but I have been pained to feel th[at] I must to those around me seem to be sitting idle, while I felt that I was doing all that I could to hasten my return, & it is some relief now that I hope that my task has been so happily accomplished to express my feelings.

S. L. A.

Will you write as early as possible? This will be mailed at neighboring village but direct as before to Armada Macomb Co. Mich.

Dr. S. L. Andrews

Armada, Feb. 7, 1852

Recd. Feb. 17/52

Wrote Feb. 21/52

Pub. Ind.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Ms.

(1852)

Armada Feb. 9th 1851

Rev. R. Anderson
Dear Sir

I wrote you two days since in reply to yours of the 15th & 16th. It is perhaps needless to trouble you again so soon, but while I expect such action of the Committee as will confirm my hopes, the possibility that it may be otherwise has kept ~~in~~ me in a state of anxious suspense, which seeks relief from some source. I have endeavoured to leave it all in the hands of my Lord, & I trust I only desire that his will may be accomplished, & that my place may be where I may best glorify him. This ~~it~~ it seems to me is where I have so long labored; & while by my labors there I am better prepared to reenter the field, I am less fitted to take a new post here.

Does not the success which has attended my effort (which apparently must have been

my last) to procure a companion indicate ~~that~~ ~~that~~ the path of duty? Miss Dike seems to me to be very happily fitted for the place, & to be useful there. Her former affliction it seems to me should be no objection ~~for~~ in view of her qualifications & what I cannot but view as the leadings of Providence in bringing us to an acquaintance & a willingness to be united. This feeling is not I believe ~~with~~ ~~neither~~ either of us a cold willingness upon conviction of duty, but a warmth of affection I had not dared to hope for with so brief an acquaintance.

I earnestly ask of the Prudential Committee that they will ~~not~~ not disappoint my hopes, & if need be that you will use your influence in my behalf.

May I not hear from you as early as possible?

I presume, although she has not expressed it, Miss D. would prefer that her affliction be not mentioned beyond what is necessary.

Very truly Your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

Dr. S. L. Andrews.

Armada, Feb. 9, 1852

Rec'd Feb. 21 —

Wrote him Feb. 21 — before receiving this

Ans'd April 12

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston
Mass.

Ray Mich
Feb. 12th

ABC 19.1 v.14

Andrews, Seth L.

70. A.L. to R. Anderson; 24 March 1852
71. Same; 27 March 1852
72. Same; 21 April 1852
73. Same; 30 April 1852
74. Same 25 May 1852
75. Same; 16 June 1852
76. Same; 7 July 1852

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Armada Mar. 24 1852

Rev. R. Anderson
Dear Sir

Your telegraphic despatch was rec^d this day. It seems by the date to have reached Detroit on the day that our last previous weekly mail reached this place, which will explain the delay.

The intelligence I receive with pleasure & I shall rejoice with such a companion as Miss Dike to return to my post. But there is a pang in leaving an aged infirm & widowed mother. But in the care of my three noble brothers, & of the widows God I can safely leave her.

As I telegraph, it will be impossible for us to be ready by the 12th of April. Miss D. has been quite ill with a severe influenza since I left her & has done little in making preparation. She is now well again. I should have but little more than time to go to C. marry & reach Boston without any effort

at preparation, beyond packing what is prepared. Miss D. has not for a long time seen her aged & very feeble father, & I think ought not to leave without visiting him. Her brothers & sisters# are most of them east & will be visited on our way.

I propose to go next week to Cincinnati & probably be married the week following, make a brief visit to Miss D's father & brother &c. in Illinois, then return to this place & as rapidly as possible make our preparations. We shall probably remain here until further orders, unless it may be best for Miss D. after a visit here to go east for the sake of a longer visit to her friends, & there wait. Have you any rule as to the allowance for outfit in such cases as mine. I have made no attempt to estimate our need as I do not know how much Miss D. will ~~have~~ need. She will perhaps receive some aid from friends, but it is uncertain. I did not dispose of my household stuff, but shall feel that some additions are necessary, but not very extensive. Miss D. is I think very economical in her habits, & expenditures.

From whom she has been for some time separated.

Affectionately your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

P. S. I met Brother Paris' friend Miss Tyler in Cincinnati. She has taken the place in Mrs. Vail's school vacated by Miss Dike. She appeared to be in good health & good spirits. I think however she feels the trial she has suffered, still.

S. L. A.

Dr. S. L. Andrews.

Armada, Mar: 24, 1852

Rec. April 3.

Ans: April 12.

MORSE LINE

EASTERN, WESTERN & SOUTHERN TELEGRAPH.

RECEIVING OFFICES:

Merchants-Exchange—Entrances same as to the Post-Office.

And No. 2 Massachusetts Block,—Court-Square.

Messages sent to all parts of the United States, and British Provinces.

From Boston to	10 words.	each added word.	From Boston to	10 words.	each added word.	From Boston to	10 words.	each added word.	From Boston to	10 words.	each added word.
Worcester	20	2	New York	20	2	Louisville	125	9	Cleveland	70	5
Springfield	20	2	Philadelphia	45	4	St. Louis	160	11	Detroit	90	6
Hartford	20	2	Baltimore	70	6	Galena	150	9	Chicago	120	7
N. Haven	20	2	Washington	70	7	Memphis	190	16	Portland	20	1
Bridgeport	20	2	Charleston	139	10	Troy	40	4	Bath	40	2
N. London	20	2	Mobile	227	14	Albany	40	4	Bangor	45	2
Norwich	20	2	N. Orleans	260	16	Utica	50	4	Calais	70	3
Providence	20	2	Pittsburg	85	7	Syracuse	60	5	St. John	95	4
Fall River	20	2	Wheeling	85	8	Rochester	60	5	Halifax	145	8
Newport	20	2	Cincinnati	95	5	Buffalo	60	5	Montreal	120	8

The original of messages to be sent, must be written plainly, to guard against mistakes. Figures are counted as if written into words. The address and signature are not counted. The Proprietors assume no responsibility in business transacted over their lines, beyond the exercise of good faith, and due diligence, and the amount paid for a transmission. And they assume no responsibility for the accuracy or dispatch of messages beyond the terminus of their respective lines. ☞ All Telegraphic Messages are treated as strictly confidential

Boston, March 27 **1852.**

The following Communication has been received at this Office, by Telegraph, from Armada 24 via Detroit 26

For Rev R Anderson
Missionary House

Impossible to be ready
April 12th. I go to
Cincinnatti next week

Seth L Andrews

12

Dr. Seth L. Andrews.

Recd. March 27. 1882

Ans. April 12

Adrian April 21 1852

Rev. R. Anderson
Dear Sir

Your letter informing me of Miss Dike's appointment was recd at Armada shortly before I left.
In pursuance of the plan mentioned in my last I have been to Cincinnati & we were married on Tuesday Apr. 13th. Owing to irregularities in the boats at this early season we were detained two days on the way & reached this place only on Saturday. We expected to leave on Monday, but an attack of diarrhoea has detained me two days. I am now relieved & expect to reach Chicago this eve. & Chrystal lake tomorrow where ~~the~~ we shall spend about two weeks with Mrs. Andrews' Father & brother, & then return to Mich, to Armada.

As I supposed Mrs. A. had not been able to make any preparation beyond what was necessary before our marriage. She is now however restored to her usual health & so soon as we can

have opportunity will engage in the necessary preparations.

I shall be glad to have as much as two months notice if possible, (although I suppose it cannot be definite so early) of the time of sailing, as we wish to remain in Mich. until we know when we may expect to sail, & then without being hurried & driven ^for time visit friends in New Eng. We shall not probably spend over two weeks in Ill. But if you have occasion to write to me there direct to Chrystal Lake Mc. Henry Co. Ill.

Mrs. A. unites with me in kind regards.

Your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

Dr. Seth L. Andrews.

Adrian, April 21, 1852

Rec'd April 28/52

Pub. Ced

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Mass.

Chrystal Lake Apr. 30/52

Rev. R. Anderson

Dear Sir

Your letter of the 12th inst forwarded from Armada, I recd. last evening. The ~~telegraph~~ telegraphic message was duly recd. by my friends. My brother wrote to Mr. Bingham at Detroit respecting it but I know not whether he replied by telegraph. You have I trust ere this recd my letter from Adrian by which you will learn from my plans that it was impossible to receive your message in season to be ready for this ship.

We are here visiting ~~the~~ ~~fat~~ Mrs. Andrews' Father & brother, & expect to return to Mich. early week after next.

I have ~~been~~ endeavoured to make an estimate of the time we shall yet need for preparation. For preparation of clothing &c. &c. for the voyage, & for some business I shall need three or four weeks in Mich. Part of the business ~~is~~ occurs

in consequence of my father's death, & could not be attended to during my late visit there, in consequence of the laws delay in some legal forms. But this will afford Mrs. A some time for preparations for which she has had no opportunity as yet. Mrs. A. has brothers sisters & other friends in Crown Point N.Y. & Pittsford Vt. her native place, whom we wish to visit. She has also some chattels bedding &c. at both those places which will assist in her outfit. For the visit & business we wish two weeks at those places. We shall wish for two weeks at Boston to visit a sister & other friends of Mrs. A's & to make our preparations for embarcation without so much haste as to go off wearied out by the preparation. The journey from Mich. to Vt. & some brief calls upon friends on the way will consume a week or more. We can hardly expect to make all our plans for so long a period & so long a journey meet our expectations; we were by illness & mis-arrangement of cars & boats delayed nearly a week in our journey to this place. To make allowance for unforeseen contingencies I would say Aug. 1st & we will Providence permitting, be ready at that time, or for the first ship that sails after that date.

For the journey from Mich. for myself, wife & a son & baggage
I shall need about one hundred dollars,
Towards our outfit I shall need to make some
purchases & employ some seamstresses, I cannot
now say how much but within one hundred
dollars. Shall I draw on Mr. Bingham for
$. 200, or for so much of it as I may
need?

Mrs. A. & myself are in usual health except that I have not yet fully recovered
from the effects of the illness mentioned
in my last, but gaining.

Mrs. A. unites with me in kind regards.

Your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

P. S. May 4th I unfortunately missed the last stage &
this has been delayed. I shall be glad of as
long a notice as possible of the time when
a ship may be expected, I suppose ordinarily
we can have nothing definite for more than
three or four weeks, but cannot Mr Tomlinson
ascertain from Mr. Hunnewell, Brewer or Pierce something
in relation to the matter? They may be able
to say even now that a vessel will sail in Aug.
or may before they are prepared to advertise
definitely. I ask this because I shall
be ~~[illegible]~~ glad to leave Mich. six weeks be-

before we sail, & I do not wish to leave until I know something about the time when a vessel may be expected.

S. L. A.

Dr. [illegible] L. Andrews,
Crystal Lake, Ill. Apr. 30, 1852
Rec'd May 12/52
Ans'd May 13/52

Armada May 25th 1852

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Dear Sir

Your letter & despatch of April 26th were rec. on my return from Ill. on the 15th inst. & your letter to me in reply to mine from Chrystal Lake by our last weekly mail on the 19th. I had not time to reply by the return of the mail.

I write to Mr. Hill by this opportunity in relation to future expenses.

I regret that the time I ask for preparation should be thought unreasonable, it does not appear to me to be so. True I have been in this country three years but Mrs. A. has not enjoyed the advantage of this time for her preparations & to visit her friends. Had she been situated in the midst of the family circle* the time might have been very much

See P. S.

shortened, but widely scattered as they are & with some of them she has not until since our marriage met for years, I do not think any unnecessary time has been asked to see them. I wished to see & know them myself, & wished her to have opportunity to become acquainted with my friends.

I regret too that you have not been sufficiently informed of my movements, yet I supposed, that I had written sufficiently. I wrote before going to Cincinnati stating my plans as definitely as I was able to do at that time, & soon after our marriage (about a week I think) I wrote again from Adrian in this state, & stating the place of my destination in Ill.

I shall still hold myself in readiness for Aug. first although I shall not object to its being the last. If there is any prospect of an opportunity earlier than your last indicates please inform me immediately.

I was thoughtless about the propose.

which comes upon you at that season in consequence of the An. mtg. which please excuse.

Mrs. A. unites in kind regards.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

P. S. Mrs. A. has been for some time separated from her family friends as she has been engaged in teaching at Cincinnati.

S. L. A.

Dr. Wm. L. Anders.

Arcada, May 25, 1852

Recd. June 1/52

Ansd. June 23/52.

Armada June 16th 1852

Rev. R. Anderson

Dear Sir

I am impelled by the character of my late communications from the Missionary rooms to suspect that there may be a feeling there that it is not my duty to return to the Islands. If this is so I trust you will inform me frankly. I know that there is an influx of physicians which may render my services less necessary & perhaps unnecessary. I have not however sufficient information to judge. My health too, is not what it was#, & my strength less than formerly. Upon this point I endeavoured to give you a full & fair statement when I first wrote to you in relation to my return in 1850. Before writing I endeavoured to give the subject a careful & prayerful consideration, & the more so as my

Is not what it was before my long illness.

friends were disposed to discourage my return on the score of my health. I did not desire to push my way back, against the will of my Master in heaven, nor do I now. But if duty calls I am ready & anxious to go. If others feel that my health is such that I have not a prospect of continued strength for labor there, or that there are already physicians enough on the ground, or for any other cause that it is best I should not return, I am willing I think to listen to reason, & only desire to know what duty is.

I had almost concluded that Providence had shut the door against me before I met Mrs. Andrews, & you know something of my trials. That I have been delayed already three years & expended more than $1000 ~~doll~~ has not been by my own choice; although I should have been unwilling ~~[illegible]~~ to have left at any time previous to last fall. So soon as I felt ~~that~~ my improving health justified it I

I wrote to you upon this subject & fully expected that I should find a companion & be ready to sail last fall.

A few weeks since I expressed in urgent terms my anxiety to return but I am only anxious to know what the Lord would have me to do, & wrote thus believing that duty called me.

If we are to go in Aug. I ought to leave here week after next. Will you have the kindness to write immediately & direct to Romeo. I think a reply may reach that place by Saturday of next week, & cannot at best reach this place until Wednesday following.

Perhaps this is needless, but as I have said above I do not desire to force my way into the field against the will of Providence. If those who have the oversight of the work think it not my duty to return & only assent in compliance with my urgent wishes their feelings & wishes ought to have weight with me.

If the Ship is to leave in Aug. I must

by all means leave Mich. about July 1st so that it is desirable, ~~that~~ necessary that I have an immediate answer, & such a statement of your views & ~~the~~ of the views of the Committee as shall render further correspondence unnecessary. I shall go on with my preparations but shall not use the draft sent me until I hear from you.

Mrs. A. unites with me in kind regards.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

D. S. L. Andrews,
Angola, Mich. June 16/52
Rec'd June 22/52
Ans. June 28/52

Armada July 7th 1852

Rev. R. Anderson
Dear Sir

Your letter in reply to mine of the 16th has been rec'd. I have carefully & prayerfully considered the subject and conclude that in view of all circumstances it is not wise for me to return to the Islands. I can ~~scarcely~~ only with pain bring myself to write what must next follow, that I ask a dismission from the service of the Board.

I regret exceedingly that anything in my course should have given dissatisfaction to the Committee & I cannot but think that if they could look at my situation in all its circumstances they would approve of my course. Perhaps I ought to have asked a dismission earlier but I have done what

thought to be duty.

In relation to the delay since my marriage I cannot think it too much. Although I had already had sufficient time Mrs. A. had not had the benefit of that time. We thought it best to marry as soon as her appointment was made out, & visit & make preparations subsequently. The appointment came, & with it a notice that a ship would sail in less than three weeks after I rec'd the notice. Mrs. A was in Cincinnati, & by reason of sickness & non-appointment, no preparation made for our voyage. Could I be expected to under such circumstances to go at so short notice? I replied by telegraph & wrote at the same time that I could not be ready. I also stated, if I mistake not, my plan to go to C. for Mrs. A. the week following, to be married & then visit her father in Ill. I did not then remember his residence. Soon after our marriage a while

on our way west I wrote, that you might know where to address me. While at Chrystal Lake I rec. your letter forwarded ~~by~~ from Armada, I think ~~about~~ less than three weeks before the time appointed for sailing. A thousand miles from the point of embarcation, I could only have made the most direct rout to New L. neglecting all friends & making all our outfit under most disadvantageous circumstances. To avoid any further disappointment I carefully estimated the time I thought we might reasonably ask for preparation & visiting, & stated to you the result, that we would be ready by Aug. 1st. I know a lady ready in six weeks, not long since, but she was in N. York & ~~her~~ under her father's roof, with all the family circle under the same roof. Mrs. A.s father & a brother are in Ill. Her brothers & sisters & other friends are in Brown Point N.Y. Pittsford Vt. her native place, & in Boston. My friends whom I should feel it

necessary to visit you all in this place. Until I saw the notice I had not expected to be called to sail so soon after our marriage although I would gladly have been ready last fall. For this I made as I thought every proper effort. I could not ask Mrs. A. (although she did duty require it she would cheerfully make the sacrifice) to go out without a parting visit to her Father Brothers & Sisters. Although the substance of what I have written is already before you I wished to say thus much that the Committee may have before them a connected view of the causes for so long a delay after our marriage as I would not willingly have any blame rest upon my course if it can be avoided. My relations with you all have hitherto been pleasant & I would that it should continue so.

I ought to have written in relation to my med. letters & other matters, but sickness in the family has occupied my time, & I have now only time to close & send this to the office. Your Brother in Christ

Seth L. Andrews

D. S. L. Andrews, Amador, Feb 7. 1882
Rec'd Feb 18/82

ABC 19.1 v.14

Andrews, Seth L.

77. A.L. to H. Hill; 26 July 1852
78. A.L. to R. Anderson; 26 July 1852
79. Same; 15 Sept 1852
80. Same; 18 April 1853

Armstrong, Richard

81. A.L. to D. Green; 1 July 1844
82. Same; 20 July 1844

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

83. Same; 9 Oct 1844

77

S. L. Andrews

Aug. 7. 1852
$15. " dona.   A. " 12. "

Amaida July 26th 1852

To H. Hill Esqr.

Dear Sir

Put. W.   By our last mail I recd. from Dr. Anderson notice that the ~~Pru~~. Prud. Committee have acceded to my request & granted me a dismission from the service of the Board.

I therefore return the draft for $1.100 recd. from you a few weeks since. I have in my possession some medical works & Surgical instruments which belong properly to the medical department of the Sand. Isl. Miss. although a portion of them have never been charged to that depart. having been purchased since my ~~return~~ residence in this country, in expectation of returning to my former post. These will be useful to me, & I shall be glad to keep them & pay for them what they are worth out of the disposal of my effects at the Isls. which I suppose may be as useful to you or

more to them to receive it here.
If I shall succeed in finding a place where I can engage in business with a prospect of an income that will enable me to do it I shall be glad to take the remainder of my medical Library & instruments now at the Isls. But as yet I cannot speak definitely for I know of no opening, while my age & health are such that I do not enter the field with the same prospects that a younger man would do.
The books I have with me are about a dozen volumes & cost perhaps not far 20 dollars. The instruments are a surgeons pocket case, lancets, catheters, dentist instruments &c. & cost originally an equal sum or perhaps something more.
I have also a watch part of my outfit. It was estimated at 20 doll. by a watch-maker a few months since. I suppose this will be considered as the property of the Board, but am not certain what your rule is in relation to outfit, will you inform me?
The microscope which purchased at

Lancets	2.00
Disecting Inst.	3.25
Catheters	1.50
Instrum. for	3.00
Syringe	1.00
Books	5.30
	16.05
Blow pipe	1.00

Recd. Nov. 20, 1852

N. York for the Med. Depart. I think I shall be glad to retain a pay for it at the Ids. It cost $. 95.
If such an arrangement will be acceptable please inform me & I will make out a list of the articles with their value as well as can be ascertained. I have not bills that will enable to give the cost in all cases, nor will my memory serve entirely.

I am requested by my brother George Andrews of this place to forward five dollars as his donation to the Board. My mother also sends ten dollars which she wishes acknowledged as from my Father Rev. E. D. Andrews, deceased in Jan. last, as it is a sum which he had devoted to the mission cause from a sum of money he was expecting to rec. & which came to hand after his death. This is an addition to his usual contribution of $. 10 which was thrown in with the contributions of the church, & not acknowledged separately, as he intended, that he might receive ~~as usual~~ in years past the Herald for this year. The Herald however still comes to his address & I suppose as he ~~praised the~~ contributed the $10 it may be rec. by my mother on that footing.

In her ~~d~~ dying hours my first wife expressed a wish to make some charitable bequests but became delirious before a will could be executed & the property fell to her children the subsequent death of the youngest placed a small sum of money in my hands as his heir which has by ~~a~~ interest accruing now become the amount ~~Mrs.~~ Mr. A. mentioned, ~~For the~~ & wish to carry out her intention. There is one hundred dollars for the Board. Which if my means at the I.s. should be sufficient it would perhaps accommodate us both better to pay there, ~~but~~ If ~~I~~ my effects there ~~should~~ can be disposed of ~~the~~ for their value I think there will be a sufficient sum.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

P. S. I have no funds remaining in my hands unexpended.

S. L. Andrews
Anesta Jany 26, 1852
Recd Apr 18, 1852

Armada July 26th 1852

Rev. R. Anderson

Dear Sir

Your letter date July 14th was rec. by our last mail.

Although I had asked a dismission & do not regret the course, yet the announcement that the act was done & I was separated in a measure from those with whom I have so long labored in love could not but cause a feeling of sadness which I cannot yet wholly lay aside. But I trust it is of the Lord who doeth all things well.

Accept my thanks for your kind letter & kind wishes.

I trust that the Lord will open for me a field of usefulness where I may ~~earn~~ my bread & still labor in his cause. At present I know of know opening but shall seek one in this

region. My age & impaired health unfit me for the hard service of many western locations so that I shall not perhaps as readily find a suitable opening as one in the vigor of youth & health. But I have not seen the righteous forsaken, & I will put my trust in him who careth for me.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

Dr. P. L. Anderson

Armada, July 26, 1852

Rec. Augt. 7, 1852

Armada Sept. 15/52

Rev. R. Anderson

Dear Sir

Your very kind letter communicating the action of the Comttee. was duly recd. Please ~~suppose~~ to accept my thanks & communicate to the Committee my thanks for their liberality to me.

I ought to have been more particular in giving the list of articles in my possession. In ~~that~~ the former letter I gave the more important articles designing when I knew the views of the com. to out out a complete bills of all those with some minor articles. I have not yet done it having ~~been~~ much occupied since the receipt of yours, but I will as soon as possible enumerate & estimate the articles & communicate to you I write this in haste feeling that a reply ought to have been sent sooner.

I think the remainder of the articles

may be in value between ten & twenty dollars,

I am looking at some places ~~for a~~ with a view to settlement but have not yet selected.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

Dr. S. L. Andrews,

Armada; Mich, Sep. 15, 1852.

Recd, Sep. 22/52.

Romeo Apr. 18 1853

Rev. R. Anderson
Dear Sir

Mindful of my promise to inform you of my location I ~~[illegible]~~ ought ere this to have written but — ~~[illegible]~~ I may as well call it procrastination. I had before my journey east been urged to locate in this village but I thought the place already fully occupied. During my absence one of the physicians decided to engage in other business & he with others urged me to settle here. Thus the Lord seemed to have prepared an opening & I have entered in. Thus far my business although in a healthy season has fully met my expectations. The Lord has blessed my labors in healing the sick so that I have lost but a single patient & that a bad case of inflammation of the lungs which had been in the hands of a quack for two weeks.

It is pleasant too that I am cordially received by the physicians who were here before me so that no unpleasant feeling exists. Romeo is a pleasant village having a population of about 1000 souls & increasing rapidly. It is located about 40 miles north of Detroit.

You had occasion some time since to show up Madame Pfeffer, the enclosed paragraph which I cut from the Detroit Free Press may interest you as illustrating her character for veracity. But perhaps you have already seen the article alluded to in the Post.

The Micronesian Mission seems greatly blessed thus far, & I trust will continue to be so. Such an offshoot too from the Hawaiian churches & mission cannot but be deeply interesting to all who love the cause of our Lord, & will not fail to call out the fervent effectual prayer of the righteous.

Mrs. A. unites with me in kind regards to yourself & family.

Your Brother in Christ
Seth L. Andrews

Dr. S. L. Andrews

Romeo, Mich., April 18, 1853

Recd. Apr. 23, 1853.

Letters from

Rev. Richard Armstrong.

1844–1859.

Honolulu. July 1. 1844.

Rev. David Green;

My dear Sir;

Your letter of Aug 8th '43 was received on the first of April last. I feel under great obligations to you for writing me so fully & freely in regard to some things mentioned in a former letter of mine, and if your explanations have had the same effect on the mind of others (I read part of your letter in our Genl. Meeting) as upon my own, you have not written in vain. I do most sincerely rejoice in any thing which promotes good feeling & mutual confidence between the mission & our beloved directors at home. So far as I am able to judge now there is a very kind state of feeling in the mission towards yourself & the other gentlemen at the Missionary House; never perhaps more so, since my first acquaintance with the mission and is not this a token for good? I cannot but think that as we all grow older, we grow a little wiser; we mutually understand each other better, & if any thing unpleasant should occur in future I hope we shall ~~[illegible]~~ not allow it to mar, or disturb our harmony. During our two last General Meetings, a delightful state of feeling existed; I do not recollect of even one unpleasant remark being made, in former years it was not so much so.

I duly appreciate all you say about the difficulty of your position, & I have no doubt your hearts are often ready to sink within you, under the weight of responsibility which presses upon you. But the cause is worthy of all you or we endure for it [illegible]

toils, cares & tears will not last always; in due time we shall go to our rest if we are faithful, and that rest will be perfect & endless.

My principal object in writing you now across the continent is to inform you how matters stand with us in regard to Mr Bingham. The case was brought before our late Gen. Meeting by Mr B's own letter to the mission dated Dec 3d '42, in which he says

"The arrangement you have made to secure ~~the service~~ Bro. Armstrong's labours at Honolulu & in my church for the present will favor my remaining here a little longer while he fills for the time the place of a colleague pastor, so that the interests of that church will not be allowed to suffer by neglect.

I have as yet a good field for myself, tho, not permanent. None of us can consider our station, on a pilgrimage as permanent. Your revolutions of late at the islands have shewn impressively the instability of human affairs & the rotations of office & ~~health~~.

Pride, ambition, lust of power, may shake thrones: usurpations & oppressions may jostle & agitate the institutions of men; but the kingdom of Christ is stable and the relations of his churches & their pastors are not violently to be deranged especially by any power exterior to the ecclesiastical in which all things should be done decently & in order".

The plain English of the above cannot be mistaken ~~and~~ the impression it made here you can readily imagine. This letter was refered to a committee of three consisting of Bishop, Baldwin & Parker. After a [illegible] [illegible]tion with myself & the deacons of the [illegible] [illegible]ght in the following report, viz.

1. That Mr. Bingham's long delay to return on account of the protracted illness of Mrs. Bingham, while it calls for our sympathy with them in this their affliction, and our prayers for its removal, also calls upon us to act in making provision for the spiritual wants of the people of his former charge.

2. That every year of his absence seems to lessen the probability of his return and the last accounts from him render such return more uncertain than before as no definite period can be looked forward to, when he can be expected back.

3. That having conversed with Mr. Armstrong & with the elders of his church on the subject, they are convinced that there is necessarily great inefficiency in conducting the affairs of the church, by a mere temporary pastor & that it is not desirable to continue such an arrangement to an indefinite length of time.

4. Therefore resolved, that we recommend to the clerical association, to appoint Mr. Armstrong pastor of the 1. Church of Honolulu.

5. That a committee of one be chosen to reply to Mr. Bingham's letter & explain to him the decision of the mission on the subject with the reasons for the same.

6. That the missionaries of the island of Oahu be a committee to arrange the labours of Mr. Bingham, should he return before another Genl. Meeting of the mission take place."

This report was adopted & a letter approved by the mission has been written to Mr. Bingham, informing him of the above action & assigning him a careful revision of the Hawaiian Bible should he return to the islands.

This was felt by us all to be a very difficult & delicate subject to dispose of; it was brought up and its

cepted at several different times & at last the brethren were not unanimous as to the best course to be pursued in order to save the feelings of an old & respected brother and at the same time secure the interests of the church here.

My own agency in the case consisted in simply asking a release from my engagement as deputy or substitute pastor & requesting that my own appropriate charge might be assigned me as that of any other missionary. At the same time I offered & indeed preferred to take another charge in case the mission wished to reserve the church still longer for its original pastor. This latter would have pleased me best, since I had never yet felt quite at home in this church, not being looked upon as its proper pastor, nor looking upon it as my proper charge. But this proposal did not carry; indeed it would be difficult to obtain the consent of any ministerial brother to assume a ~~temporary~~ charge of so much weight & responsibility, especially if it must be at the expense of his own proper charge & under great uncertainty as to the time of its continuance.

My reasons for declining to act longer as deputy-pastor I gave to the committee & the mission & they were in substance as follows; The uncertainty which still hangs over Mr. B's return; the position taken by him in his letters to the mission, claiming that his church be reserved for him & restored to him should he return at any future day, not as a matter of courtesy but of right; That I had already kept his place for him four years & this was twice as long as I agreed to, & done at a great sacrifice of personal & family comforts, in the mean time my station

(second to none on the island)) & church were taken from me & given to another; but above all, that the station of mere acting pastor had been attended with many disadvantages from the first, & the evils growing out of it were increasing so as to make it very unsatisfactory either to myself or the church; and I felt satisfied that it was not my duty to continue in it longer, especially since no definite period could be looked forward to when Mr Bingham's return might be expected; moreover, that as Mr B. is evidently displeased, (as I learn both from your letters & his own) with my location at Honolulu, I wished to have a separate sphere of labour at once, so as to avoid the possibility of collision with him, should he return. Still I make no objection to reserving the church for him; but only to my continuing as its acting pastor.

Whether I have taken the wisest course in this matter or not you & others will judge, but if I know any thing of the motives which have actuated me, they have not been altogether ~~selfish~~ selfish, nor have I been conscious of any ill will toward Mr Bingham or any desire to infringe upon his rights or disparage his work. Feeling that my situation was such as to diminish my usefulness & my influence with the church of wh. I have been four years pastor [illegible] tem., I felt it to be a duty to seek a release from such a position, yet at the same time it is painful to cross the wishes of an old & much respected member of our mission.

I have thought it my duty thus to state things to you just as they have occurred, that you may know how to act in case of Mr B.'s return & anticipate any thing of an [illegible] nature that might arise. Were Mr B. here this moment for [illegible] he ~~be happy to~~ be willing to have him [illegible] the [illegible] of this ~~the~~ church & spoke decidedly to the committee.

pastorship of his church, but I feel unwilling to live longer in suspense.

From some remarks in a private letter to a person not a member of the mission I fear that Mr Bingham is feeling hard towards myself personally. He writes, "I perceive that Mr Armstrong is located at Honolulu, but the General letter does not say in what capacity: nor does it allude to my relation to the first church of that place. Letters from Mr Armstrong & Chamberlain, written before the Genl. Meeting, but received by me the latter part of July intimate that Mr Armstrong wished the pastorship of the first church of Honolulu & that it was probable the mission would give it him, but whether as my colleague or ~~my~~ supplanter, nowhere appears. Will you inform me by the earliest opportunity? - - - We expect if we return to find our old post and nestle down there for life. If my relation to my church is ever dissolved I expect to be a party in the transaction as much at least as Kamehameha III, was when he resigned his seat to another in that region of revolutions".

I make this quotation that you may the necessity there will be for caution on the part of the Pru. Committee in case of Mr B's return; certainly the word supplanter is not a very soft one, & the last sentence sounds even war like. It is not exactly correct to say that I "wished the pastorship of the first church"; the information communicated to Mr B. was in substance that I had made up my mind to apply to be stationed at Honolulu as pastor of the first ch. or be restored to my people at Waialua. Was there any thing unnatural or unreasonable in this after being 3 years in suspense. I did so apply & was stationed here permanently, but was prevailed upon to continue as acting pastor another year in

the full belief that in that time Mr B. would be here if ever. I did this reluctantly I confess, knowing the inconvenience of my situation, but I was willing to do a good deal to oblige & save the feelings of Mr Bingham. Now has he any reason to feel hard that I feel unwilling to continue a fifth sixth or seventh year in the unsatisfactory unnatural if not unscriptural relation of a mere acting pastor? It seems to me on reflection he cannot be. Should that good old brother return in the spirit of the language quoted above, it would be most unfortunate; but should he come back to us in a good, kind, accommodating, & humble spirit, laden as it were with blessings to scatter among us, no one would give him a more cordial welcome than myself & there is work enough in Honolulu for us both, yea for many more if we are united.

I have only to add in conclusion that this church has formally requested me to be its pastor & is making a united & systematic effort to raise my support. $100 have been paid into your treasury already for that purpose, but I do not expect that they will raise the whole amount necessary the present year, tho they are quite spirited in the thing just now.

I fear we shall have quite a small supply of medicine by the Globe, as I learn from the invoice all on that vessel is for Dr Andrews & I learn too that Dr Judd did not send home the annual list in 1842, he having still the care of the Dispensary at that time. I wish therefore to request that no time be lost in forwarding the supply written for by Mr Chamberlain last fall; it is very important that they be sent soon as we are in great need of some [medi]cines even now. I would write you more, bu[t] ... [sha]ll. -- Be kind enough to reply to this overland as soon [&] let me know definitely what to expect in ... [Bin]gham. With fraternal regard

I remain Yours &c

R. Arm[strong]

P. S. I should be glad to send you a copy of a letter drawn up by Mr. Clark touching the case of Mr. Bingham, as that would give you all that was proposed & that letter suited some of the brethren better than the report wh. was adopted, tho. the two are essentially the same. But that letter Mr. Clark has taken to Maui.

Rev. Richard Armstrong.
S. I. July 1. 1844.
Recd Nov. 14. 1844.
ackd in Gen. Let. 26 Feb. 1845. DG
ansd Apr. 24. DG

Rev. David Greene.
Missionary House,
Pemberton Square,
Boston.
U.S.

single

Honolulu July 20. 1844.

To Rev. D. Greene }
Cor. Sec^y of A. B. C. F. M }

My dear Sir;

Your letter of Nov 28th 43, by the Globe, came to hand on the 15th of this month. It is very gratifying to me to have your views of so many interesting topics & I appreciate your long letter the more, when I consider how you must always be pressed for want of time.

We are much pleased with the first appearence of the new helpers; they appear to have been well selected & I hope a great increase of strength to our mission by their accession to it.

I am sorry for the course Dr Lafon is taking, but I cannot say, I am surprised at it. Though a most amiable man, & conscientious, I was going to say to a fault, his moral training has been defective, and he has rode a hobby till it has carried him into a wilderness where he has lost his bearings. He is not a man of much power & I do not think his efforts will result in much injury to your Board.

I wrote you a few days ago across the conti

-ments gave you my views at some length in rega[rd]
to the case of Mr. Bingham; since receiving your
letter by the Globe & hearing from various sources
of Mr. B's deep feeling of dissatisfaction on account
of my location here, I feel more & more concern[ed]
lest trouble arise on his return to the islands. Should
he return here and assert his claim to his church &
people, or waiving this, should entertain feelings
of dissatisfaction, there is no telling where the
matter might run to. The danger is not so much
that he would come into personal collision with
myself, as with the mission; and unless he is
greatly altered, he is not a man to yield a
point where he thinks he is right, or where he
thinks his rights are invaded. In such cases
in large bodies, especially there is almost always a divers-
ity of opinion, & feeling, & hence parties arise, and
strife, contention & every evil work is the con-
-sequence. Now, my dear Brother, you are
aware that we have had enough of this
sort of evil in former years; at several periods
our whole mission was agitated from the centre
to the circumference, by the conduct of one
single member & we have suffered more than
tongue can tell on this account. It might
not be so, it is true, in the case of Mr. B's retu[rn]

Still, I cannot but apprehend that it might be & I only express my fears with a view to prevent trouble hereafter. The Pru. Committee should understand the case fully and act accordingly. I hope I shall be disposed to be accommodating, should Mr B. return, so far as will be consistent with order & the welfare of the cause; but where these are concerned or in jeoperdy, we must look at the general good & not at private feelings. I do not here give you any explanation of my own course in the case, nor of that pursued by the mission, having said all I wish to in my letter across the continent. My only motive now is to urge the Pru. Committee so to act as to save us from future trouble.

This letter is to go to Maui, to be sent by a whaling ship bound home from thence, but as there is much uncertainty whether, it will arrive in season, I shall write but little. I hope to write you more fully & on many points before long. One of my little daughters is very sick of a fever; we feel some solicitude on her account, but apprehend no immediate danger. I write by her sick bed & have had to rise every few moments since commencing this letter. Hoping to resume the pen at a more convenient season, I will close by assuring you of my sincere regard & Christian love.

Affly yours R. Armstrong

I am exceedingly glad of your remarks concerning the Teachers: they are just to the point: a word in season, how good is it?

Rev. Richard Armstrong.

Honolulu, July 20. 1844

Recd. Jan. 8. 1845.

Acted in Ex. Com. 23 April. DG.

Mr. Bingham

Ansd 24. D4

Rev. David Greene
Cor. Sec. of A.B.C.F.M.
Missionary House,
Boston.

Honolulu, Sand. Islands
Oct. 9. 1844.

To Rev. D. Greene,
Miss. House

P.C.

My dear Brother;

It has been my custom & it is common among us I believe, to send to the Cor. Secretary a sort of annual station, embodying the most important items of news, and embracing a general view of the operations going on at the Station. This I have now sat down to do, though my time is so much occupied by my editorial labours, and so cut up by the various miscellaneous duties of a pastor, that I cannot hope to make out much of a letter.

P.C.

You have been informed of the ill health of Mrs Armstrong. This has been, from the nature of the complaint a grievous & threatening affliction to us, and I am sorry to say, it is not entirely removed. She has occasionally a distressing ill turn, brought on by over-exertion, care or excitement, and at such time suffers extremely in her head. But she is able most of the time to attend to her family concerns & can usually attend a native female meeting each week.

We have thought a good deal of a return to the United States, this being the only remedy held out by our physicians, for her disordered nervous system; but while she is no worse than at present, we shall probably remain in the field & do what we can. We feel all the interest in the work, that we ever have done, and we shall not leave so long as we can conscientiously remain. We have looked the whole ground over & considered the objections to a missionaries returning; they are serious & great. There is a feeling of strong opposition in the churches to the return of their missionaries & it is natural there should be. Great expense must be incurred before our places could be supplied here, & we have here a wide field of usefulness. These and other considerations weigh upon our minds & incline us to hold on as long as we conscientiously can; it may be that we shall end our days here & leave our bones among our people. God grant that we may, for it seems to me a greater trial to leave the islands now than it was 13 years ago, to leave the dear home of my childhood for a foreign land.

But should Mrs Armstrong's health sink again as it was a year ago, I think we shall feel it to be our duty to leave, and such may be the urgency of the case, as to lead us to resolve on the measure without waiting to consult the Pru. Committee. I wish the Committee to be informed of this fact. Did I apprehend such an unhappy result within a short time I would directly request permission now to return; but I cannot but cherish the hope that the Lord our Master will condescend to employ us a little longer in this part of the vine-yard.

My own health is by no means perfect, though I have no desease. Long & severe labour in a warm climate have taken away much of my vigor, so that I cannot do so much work as I used to. Could my place be supplied, six months rest on a short voyage, would probably be gain not only to me, but to the work. But I do not see how to get out from under my burden.

(See last leaf)

Church & congregation. My church now consists of about 1500 members; of whom 49 have been added since the commencement of the year. This large flock is scattered along a coast of 13 miles and inland along several virdant & beautiful vallies. I feel the charge to be an overwhelming one; to feed the flock properly, to lead them into the green pastures & besides the still waters of God's word; to know their state, keep up their interest in divine things and attend to all the cases of discipline, require an amount of faith, zeal & patience, as well as bodily vigor, equal to those of Wesley or Whitfield. Labours on the Sabbath are not sufficient; they must be continued during the week, or the labours even of the Sabbath will amount to but little.

I am obliged to rely a good deal on native assistants. My field is divided into sections & subsections, each having its presiding elder or watchman with his several aids under him, according to the number of souls committed to his super

vision. These helpers are elected by the church once a year & may be reelected as often as the church sees proper. Some of them are very good men & very useful in the Lords service. We could not get along without them. Others need more watching. On each Sabbath, after morning service, they report to me the state of their respective charges & we confer together for a season, on the spiritual interests of the church, and then unite in prayer.

Of outposts I have seven & I visit them as often as circumstances allow. At the three most important, viz. Waikiki, Manoa, & Nuuanu I hold a meeting once a week, when I preach the word, catechise, receive the reports of the watchmen, & attend to cases of discipline. These outpost or field labours are very important as well as pleasant; they carry the light into the dark corners, & afford opportunities for that familiar intercourse with the people in which, advice, reproof, rebuke, instruction or exhortation may be given as the case may require; and above all they have an important influence in keeping up the congregation on the Sabbath. It uniformly declines when they are dropped.

In a church so numerous, composed of persons but partially civilized & seeing the truths of christianity as it were through a glass darkly; continually prone too to relapse into their former manner of life, or so unstable as to be easily led astray by the lusts of the flesh the lusts of the eye, or the pride of life, the utmost vigilence is necessary to maintain order & keep up even a tollerable standard of piety. Discipline must be prompt & decided & practices discountenanced which among a more civilized & enlightened people might be allowed.

Of the state of religion in this church I have little to say that is encouraging. During last winter we had a very interesting state of things. Meetings were crowded, prayers were fervent, & some souls were converted. This state of things continued for several months; but since that time the church has passed through a season of apathy, and there have been quite a number of cases of outbreaking sin & consequent discipline. The festivities of the anniversary of the restoration, of which you will see a glowing account in the Polynesian had a very dissipating effect upon the minds

of professors of religion & some were carried away by their excess of pleasure into scandalous sin. It was intended however, to be a strictly temperance festival. But how common it is to abuse a good thing? The festival was too protracted for the safety of morals among such a people. It would turn the heads of some in your land of steady habits, to devote 4 whole days to feasting & merriment; How much more dangerous here among a people so given to appetite, & so little under the dominion of reason & conscience.

During this festival some old amusements; songs, plays, & games were revived, and strange to tell a large company of idolaters proceeded to his H. H. Majesty's residence with an offering of pigs, fowls &c at the same time asking his patronage. But they met with a cool reception, one of the leaders was put in irons & the company dispersed. The singers & players met with more favor. Some of our Church members became so involved in these dangerous practices as to call for the exercise of discipline; but I am happy to add that the state of things is growing better. We have just had our quarterly communion, previous

to which the church was subjected to a close examination; several were cut off from our communion, over 20 in all for various offences; others who had fallen gave evidence of repentence & were restored to church fellowship; while the remiss in duty were warned, exhorted and aroused. The result is that meetings are more fully attended, professors are more awake and the state of society in general is more quiet. In secret places, however, some vicious practices are carried on; & some persons of influence indulge in cards & other games & amusements.

While there is unquestionably much chaff in this church; and while some of its members, who are persons of rank and influence, seem to have only a name to live; yet others are sober, humble and godly persons, who walk ~~with God~~ uprightly. Such are my joy & crown; for them I live; in them I have hope & delight. They love the house, the word, and the people of God, and seem to be intent on laying up treasures in heaven. They are a "little flock" however, emphatically a <u>little flock</u>.

3 mit

I believe I informed you that this church had resolved to make an attempt to raise my support the present year, or as much of it as they could. The first quarterly collection for this object has been ~~[illegible]~~ taken up and amounts to $125. This is quite as much as I expected for a begining. The fact is, the church members are generally extremely poor, and of those who have the means of supporting the Gospel, but few have the will. They do not appreciate the Gospel & how can they give their money, their dear money for that which they account of no value? But I have been pleased to see the cheerfulness with which the church generally, has undertaken to raise my support & I have no doubt, it will be a great blessing to them if they carry it out.

Since the last of July his Majesty and court have resided at this place. They have usually attended my service on Sabbath morning. The King is an attentive hearer while in the sanctuary, but no saving impression as yet seems to have been made upon his heart. He adheres to his teetotal pledge & so do the other chiefs so far as I know, but it is whispered that the King

drinks awa as a medicine, and his wife Kalama, has been suspended from the church at Lahaina for awa drinking. This I would not make public, but the practice is not confined to His Majesty & Queen, and I confess it gives me a good deal of uneasiness.

While speaking of the Chiefs as a class, I may add that as to ~~morals &~~ religion, they do not appear well. They are not outwardly immoral, but I know of no chief of rank, in whose piety we have confidence. Those chiefs who were regarded as firm, consistent & godly persons & who exerted such a powerful influence in suppressing vice, in promoting order, education & the cause of Christ; among whom were Kapiolani, Hoapili's wife, have all been removed by death. This is a striking Providence. The Lord has come from time to time & taken them all away. Several high chiefs were formerly members of churches, but have been excluded for various offences. Some of them would be glad to return to the communion of the church, but their repentance has not as yet appeared satisfactory.

Of government matters I need say

but little since you receive the Polynesian which is now a government organ and its Editor Mr. Jarves, is a good man, having taken the oath of allegiance. Your remarks respecting this gentleman were just, and though he is not in favor with foreigners now, so much as with the government. He is not a man who has any sympathy with evangelical religion, or with our stern exclusiveness as those folks call it; & hence he will be likely to advocate a more liberal Christianity than we are apt to teach. As you see in his paper, he has been urging the subject of an Episcopal Church here, and for no reason on earth in my view, but the one just stated. There are a few who sympathise with him, but it will not go yet a while, if it ever does.

The policy of the government now is to offer inducements to foreigners to take the oath of allegiance, as you may see by the Polynesian, and identify their interests with those of the nation. A number have done so, and now hold important offices. In fact, all the weightier matters of government are now managed by naturalized

foreigners, & it may be expected ~~that~~ they will become more & more so, as foreigners increase and the business of government becomes more & more complicated. Perhaps it is necessary that things take this course, since natives of proper qualifications cannot be found, to do the work of the government, now ~~that~~ it has been ushered into a place among the great governments of the earth. But how the native population is to fare in such a state of things, remains to be seen. The history of nations of like character and similarly situated, I think, will furnish some cause to fear, ~~that~~ the Hawaiian race, like the American Indians must pass away before the steady & firm step of the white man. Be this as it may however, our duty is the same, we must give them the gospel and save all we can while they are within our reach.

We are all anxious for the return of Mr Richards & Haalilio; the community is becoming almost impatient on the subject. Many changes in the

laws, it is expected, will then take place. What course the govt. will take in referen-ce to our mission, I do not know. We must at present pay 5 per ct. duty, on all the goods we import. Unless we consent to take the oath of allegiance, I have little hope that this duty will be either decreased or remitted, as the policy of the government seems to be to favor its own subjects. What would the Pru. Committee think of our taking the oath of allegiance? It seems to me, this is a question which should come before them, as it un-doubtedly will materially affect our ex-penses here, some of the chiefs have recently suggested, that if I would take the oath of allegiance, they would contribute to my support. This shows how the wind blows. I for one should not feel incli-ned to take the oath of allegiance unless all things considered, it can be made to appear that by so doing I could increase my own use-fulness in some degree; this does not appear yet. Perhaps it may by & by. One thing I am convin-ced of, & that is, that we shall receive no favors from government of any consequence while we continue to be aliens. Probably some

some facilities might be afforded for getting a support should we become subjects of his H. Majesty. Let me hear from you on this subject as soon as possible.

You will perceive by an Extra of the Polynesian that a serious misunderstanding has arisen between this government and Mr Brown, our Commissioner. Of the merits of the case, the printed documents will enable you to judge as well as I. It is a very unhappy affair & I fear, it will lead to a very undesirable result. So far as I know, the foreign community generally sympathise with Mr Brown in this case, although he has not been very popular among them, even his own countrymen.

Mr Brown and our body are on the best of terms & we are well satisfied with him so far as I know. He is frank, open, generous and familiar & seems to have conceived a high opinion of our mission generally. He has had some opportunity too, to know what sort of folks we are & what we are about having visited nearly all the stations. Until lately too, he has seemed to me to feel a deep interest in the welfare of the government & nation, and perhaps he does now, but if

course he has some fault to find with the government now. Yet after all, there is much in the correspondence that looks like petty personal quarreling. Mr B— has some faults that tend to render him unpopular. At times he is profane; his manners ~~are~~ are undignified, & at times coarse & abrupt. He is a full grown Unitarian, and holds to the most incoherent system of belief, of any man I ever talked with. But I should not call it *system*, for there is no system about it; it is a topsy turvy set of notions thrown together without form or order & yet Mr B— is so well satisfied with it that he says "none of us ministers can teach *him* any thing & moreover that he *cannot* be *wrong*"! But of course this is confidential gossip & *inter nos*. So is all I say of the rulers & government matters. *You*, I have thought ought to know something of these things, as they affect our cause not a little; but it would not be prudent to publish such statements. But it is unnecessary to tell *you* this. In all these collisions we try to stand aloof; at least what we say is among ourselves; for there is a most watchful jealousy existing on the parts of those who manage the affairs of state & we find it necessary to be prudent.

There is also difficulty between the government & Consul General Miller about a piece of land claimed by Mr Charlton

The single Brethren you have sent us, are fine young men & apparently well calculated to do good. Mr Pogue is spoken of as a young man of a good spirit and much excellence. Mr Andrews is very on the rattle & takes great interest in improving the temporal condition of the natives. But I fear he will find some of his calculations wild. This is nothing new for a fresh hand. - - - -

4. mark

The state of the temperance cause is at present very interesting in Honolulu. We have now a society of over 50 Washingtonians, which meets every Saturday evening. The meetings are very interesting, some of them intensely so. The effect upon the place is most happy; and some of the cases of reformation are almost miraculous. One old English physician, the same who attended the first Mrs Bishop, & had in those days a good reputation & a good practice, but has been for some 15 years a common street drunkard, and reduced to the lowest degree of poverty and misery, is now a reformed man & is a zealous Washingtonian. It is delightful to witness his present improved character & condition. Others are like him.

With affectionate regards to your family & associates I remain as ever your brother in the Lord

Richard Armstrong.

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

83. Post-script to letter no. 83; To D. Greene, 1 July 1844
84. A.L. to R. Anderson; 24 May 1847
85. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 Oct. 1847
86. A.L. to R. Anderson; 27 Nov. 1847

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

P.S. Since closing the above, it occurs to me, that a suitable appeal from the Board to our churches here, setting forth their duty to support their ministers, and Christian institutions generally in the islands, would do good. I think our churches are in a state to feel and appreciate such an appeal, and there is ground for a powerful one from the Board. From no quarter on earth could an appeal come with better grace. But let it be brief, plain, direct and simple as possible, embodying the principal facts, touching what the Board has done here, what remains to be done in other lands, and how desirable it is that the churches be relieved from any further care for ~~the~~ churches. This would support our appeals, which from ~~the~~ very nature of the case must be made with prudence among such a people, lest we be suspected of what has often been charged upon us by our enemies "seeking our own things."

An appeal ~~to the~~ government also on the subject of duties might be well. It could do no harm, if properly managed,

and might prove to be of immense service. You will see by our minute that a committee is appointed to lay this subject before the government at the next meeting of the legislature, but I have fears that we shall gain nothing by it, unless we take the oath of allegiance; and this of course we are not prepared to do.

But how does it look for the churches to have to pay a duty on the very medicines, paper & ink, which they send here to give away among this suffering population? It ought not so to be & it must not be.

I merely mention the above suggestions, as hints for the Pru. Committee.

Yours truly
R. Armstrong

Rev. Richard Armstrong
Honolulu. H.I. Feb. 1865.
Recd April 4.
Ans'd June 21. 65

Honolulu, May 24. 1847

To R. Anderson D. D.

Rev & dear Sir;

It was my intention to have written you by the "Montreal", my annual letter or station report, & had actually made some progress in the work; but the sheets I have written need to be copied, & as the vessel, contrary to expectation, is to sail to morrow, I have concluded to waive my first design, reserve my long letter for another opportunity, and write you briefly of our affairs now.

You will be glad to hear that our esteemed brother Chamberlain has been restored to us again, & is much more comfortable than when he left us some 18 months ago. He has had frequent attacks of hæmorrhage but gets over them wonderfully, though I do not expect that he will do much more work in the field. His council & example are valuable & we are all glad that he has visited you. We understand your views better on many points from his conversation than we did before.

Your General letter suggests many topics of interest, on which I cannot remark now; only that it will no doubt induce the mission to review carefully our whole financial system. As a mission I think our principles accord with your own—

and I know not that our rules can be made any more rigid than they are with safety. The fact is if a man on missionary ground has the temptation laid in his way to get ~~money~~ property, and the tact & disposition to avail himself of his advantages, it is difficult to frame rules or laws that he cannot manage in some way to dodge; & the great restraint must be in a proper public sentiment not in rules.

I am sorry to say we have no provision made for a general letter & in the absence of a general meeting it is difficult to make such provision. ~~It~~ One of the most difficult things we have to do at our annual meeting, is to frame a letter in behalf of the mission that will pass; there being so many shades of opinion on various points. An approximation to a correct table of Statistics however may be made out to go by the fall ships.

I regret it much that two or three more labourers could not have been sent to our aid in the Northeast. The work is great; it is heavy; it is crushing & we are growing weaker & weaker, while the Papists grow stronger & stronger by new recruits from France. About 3 months ago four new labourers arrived as a reinforcement to the papal mission here, two of them said to be priests and all of them said to be jesuits. They must number now about 26 labourers in all on the islands, not all ordained however. On our part, Bro. Forbes

an efficient & successful labourer, is about to retire from the field. Mr. Paris can hardly be expected to part with his motherless daughters & live at Kau alone; the press needs to be more vigorously plyed; the native mind is awake & needs more books; but our churches are so large & our hands so full, we have no time to make them. Do send us one, two, or three, more good men without delay.

I made a formal proposition to the government a few days since to assume the entire support of a physician, should one be sent by the Board as a missionary in all respects to be located at Honolulu, with a view to attend to the medical wants of the natives in this ~~islan~~ place as far as possible, & also of the mission families on this island. Mr Richards informed me since, that the subject had been brought before the privy council & was favorably received & will no doubt be acceded to. I should add that my proposition included medicines also, so far as natives are concerned. Should the arrangement be carried into effect, the man would be a missionary, one of us, as Mr Cooke is, but the government pay his salary & furnish the medicines he might use for natives. How does this strike your mind? I shall inform you hereafter of any action that may be taken upon it by the government. It would be an exceeding relief to myself to have a physician at this station; for the want of one I am obliged to do what I am for not only

the natives but the families at the station.

The last report of the Board is to my mind one of the most encouraging on the whole, ever issued by that body. The work in Turkey & Persia is truly wonderful & glorious; blessed are the men who are permitted to stand by & see those valleys of dry bones move & become animated by living men, the product of a new creation, infinitely more important than the creation of the material universe. I have endeavored to publish an account of that great work in the Elele, as well as from my pulpit & I hope it will not be in vain.

You will perceive that the "S. I. News," now edited by P. A. Brinsmade, has contraverted your statement in your report in regard to the government of these islands. But you have expressed my idea exactly, only not so fully as it might have been. After what you know of Brinsmade's history, you will hardly be surprised to learn that he is exceedingly hostile both to the government & the mission & being fairly seated in the editorial chair & supported by a class of men he once would have scorned to be associated with, he bends his whole energies toward injuring the reputation of both & with a rancor not exceeded, if equalled, by the bitterest articles in the old S. I. Gazettee. The reason seems to be disappointment in regard to those darling schemes he has been pursuing for years past. The house of Ladd & co. is not only bankrupt, but

the conduct of its members such as no honest community can sustain or approve. Having failed in the arbitration they have withdrawn from it & all their properties that are not mortgaged are levied upon by the Sheriff; so the whole concern is a wreck. The cause of their bitterness against us, especially some of us at this station, I take to be, the character of our testimony given under oath before the court in several instances, which were not favorable to their cause; as well as the well known fact that our sympathies are with the nation. This cannot & need not be concealed. They have done their utmost to elicit from us something to sustain their sinking cause but in vain; we could have no sympathies with a claim of $378.000 against this government. Many of the leading residents have sustained them, either from having claims on that house, or from a desire to oppose the government, or from personal regard. But if you take interest enough in the state of the foreign community to examine the papers since the first of March, that is the "Polynesian" & the "S. I. News", you will be able to form a very correct judgement of the state of affairs among us. It is a deplorable state of things I assure you. I am glad that my lot & my labours have been cast among

the poor Hawaiians. The Bethel church is no honor to Christianity & no comfort to its pastor. (This inter nos) Since Brinsmade's return from Europe he has not been present at a single communion season; on the contrary he has gone the whole figure in balls, cards and the fashionable amusements of the place. And now more recently several of the leading members of that church, who sympathise with him have even absented themselves almost entirely from the house of God on the Sabbath. So that the poor, heavy hearted pastor, stands with but one or two by his side to witness for God before the world. The wicked of course take advantage of this & triumph in their unbelief & neglect of God & the soul.

I have not thought it best to notice any of Mr Brinsmade's rancorous assertions in regard to myself, except a word of explanation in the Polynesian of March 13 I think, without any reference to the "News;" but as the whole native population was shamefully traduced in his paper of March 10, I thought it due the natives to insert some extracts from that editorial in the Elele; the result has been a waking up of the native mind in their own defence, in the defence of the work of the mission & the government, such as I never before witnessed. I speak within bounds

when I say that a quire of paper has been written by natives in different parts of the islands in reply to those false & malicious statements of Mr B. I sent for insertion in the Elele. Some of them too evince much good sense, talents, and an appreciation of Christianity & civilization. Mr Jarves is having some of the most important translated from the Elele for the Polynesian & I would recommend a perusal of them to you as valuable on many accounts. I think on the whole the Lord is bringing good out of evil in this instance. The cause of licentiousness is getting a powerful check by this discussion, the native mind is very much waked up to the subject; more stringent laws are called for by the people & the Elele is getting into gr[illegible] repute. We have ~~usually~~ heretofore issued 3000 copies, now we strike off 4000, & I fear we shall fall short of supplying our subscribers even now. Probably no one of our publications now exerts so powerful an influence on the national mind except the Bible, as this small affair; & it might be made more efficient still with more labour bestowed upon it.

But I must close as the vessel is about to sail. I shall give you, if spared, some account of the state of religion in my church & congregation in my next.

Affectionately & truly
Yours R. Armstrong.

Rev. Rich.d Armstrong
Honolulu, May 24, 1847.
Rec.d Jan.y 5, 1848.

Ans.d Feb. 28/48

Mr. Brinsmade
Ke "Elele".

Rev.d Rufus Anderson D.D.
Missionary House,
Pemberton Square,
Boston.

NEW-YORK SHIP JAN 7

Rev. Rich.d Armstrong
Honolulu, May 24 1847
R: Jan. 5, 1848

Honolulu, Sand. Islands.
Oct. ~~Sep~~ 10. 1847.

To Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missionary House, Boston

My dear Brother;

Your welcome letter of March 3d reached me in August and afforded me much satisfaction. Considering the large amount of correspondence you have on hands, I cannot reasonably expect much from you, as an individual, in this way & therefore your letters are the more agreeable & valued.

The Belgian gentleman to whom you refer, is a Mr. De Fiennes, a lawyer, who formed an acquaintance with Mr. Richards & Mr. Brinsmade in Brussels & came out here it seems, in view of the contemplated Belgian company operations. He was employed by the government for a few months, but did not prove to be a man of suitable qualifications for the post assigned him & was dismissed. He might get along in Europe where every thing goes by rule, but is not the man for business where every thing is in a forming state. I do not think

he has any connection with the Jesuits; at least I see no evidence of it. His family is now here with him & they are in rather strai-tened circumstances as he makes but a poor figure at the bar & gets but little business.

You speak of George Brown, ex commiss-ioner. Ere this you have no doubt heard of the probability that he has come to a melancholy & unexpected end. Not a word has been heard of the Wm Neilson in which he sailed since she left this harbour. The probability is that she was lost in a typhoon on her passage to China. He left here in a most dreadful state of mind.

Mr Ricord, formerly attorney general of this kingdom, has recently left us, for California. Although a man possessed of some good qualities, he was not the man for the office he held; he was technical as a lawyer, and lacked sober judgement & good sense as a man: his temper too was impetuous.

The U. S. Ship Cyane recently made us a long visit, & Capt. Duponts course among the residents, I believe, is generally approved. For one I was much gratified by my intercourse with him. [Inter nos, he spoke to me in terms of unqualified disapprobation of Mr Ten Eyks course here, especially his having espoused the cause of Ladd & co, & thus made himself

a partizan; also, of his inserting some extraordinary clauses in the treaty he proposed to this government.] Mr. T. is not on the most friendly terms with the government, although there has been no open rupture. This affair of Ladd & co. has done immense injury, in producing bad blood in the community. But since the "S. I. News" ~~has~~ become extinct, a good state of feeling has been on the increase.

But religion is low, very low among the residents; ~~but~~ very few of them attend public worship of any kind. They talk of a place of worship & also a kind of worship distinct from the seamens chapel, & I hope they will accomplish their design, if a devoted & evangelical man can be found to serve them. There is some probability that Admiral Thomas will be the means of having an Episcopalian minister sent here; should a good man be sent I shall rejoice, for the foreign community is increasing & it is distressing to see so many living without even the form of worship. Among the residents are some very worthy persons both male & female, whose influence is in favor of order, & morality, & there are a good many children & youth among them, who are very interesting & loudly call for religious influence.

A flourishing temperance society

exists in the village, which is doing much good; but among sailors there is a good deal of intoxication at present. The duty on ardent spirit is $5 per gallon & yet it is bought & sold in great quantities. Probably there is some smuggling going on.

Among the natives we see very little, almost no intemperance at all. This I think is mainly owing to the cost of ardent spirit & the influence of the King & chiefs who are still on the side of cold water, with two or three exceptions. In fact, the chiefs as a class were never more sober & upright in their manner of life than now; they are generally regular & constant in attending divine service on the Sabbath, some twice, others three times a day. The King does not attend our afternoon service on Sabbath but has a sort of family meeting in his palace, in the evening at candlelight, which all the chiefs in the place, old and young attend. From twenty to thirty are usually present & the service, which is short & adapted to the audience, is

one of much interest & importance. While it tends to confirm the faith of those Chiefs who are professors of religion; it also serves to keep up in the King's mind and all about him, an idea of God and their accountability to him. The ~~family~~ care of this meeting devolved upon Mr Richards, until his distressing illness; since then Mr Andrews & myself ~~go there~~ officiate alternately.

The King has also family worship regularly, when the Scriptures are read in course, accompanied with singing and prayer. Our devoted & excellent brother John Ii usually officiates at this exercise; probably no other person in the nation exerts a more general, steady & happy influence on the cause of religion than he. Being among the first converts & having had the best opportunities for acquiring general intelligence & a knowledge of the world, the country affords; & having stood firm by the *pono* through all the changes and trials the nation has passed through, he is regarded as a *tried* man, whose principles cannot be shaken. His wife Sarah too is not far behind him in Christian con-

-sistency & worth. Their hands & hearts are in every good work.

The lamentable fall of the Queen I mentioned in a former letter; she is still under censure, but professes repentence and is anxious to be restored to the fellowship of the church. I think it best however to give her a pretty long season of trial, lest the impression get abroad that chiefs are favored in the church.

The church under my care has increased but little since my last annual report. In July 1846 seventy were received on profession of their faith, and in April last forty three more; & within twelve months past 14 have been received from other churches on certificate. The number who have died I am not able to ascertain with exactness on account of the scattered condition of the church along thirteen miles of coast, & through several vallies in the interior of the island; but it cannot be less than 40; ten have removed to other places; total decrease 50, which will leave exclusive of 15 under suspension for various offences, fifteen hundred and forty eight in regular standing.

The state of religion is about medi

ority, perhaps a little below it. We have no revivals, and not many inquirers; and yet there has been but little outbreaking iniquity in the church. Our Christian people are growing in knowledge, & becoming more established in the faith.

During last winter or rainey season, we ~~had~~ enjoyed a precious refreshing from on high for several months, during which period some 200 professed to come out from the world & be on the Lords side. These were collected into classes & carefully instructed from week to week in the doctrines & duties of Christianity. Many of them have run well, & I hope ere long, to receive them to the fellowship of the church; while others have fallen away & "care for none of these things".

The vices which hinder the growth of our professors in holiness are still the same as they used to be – the remnant of heathenism. The "lusts of the flesh, the lusts of the eye & the pride of life," have a great sway among such a people; they are emphatically carnal, sold under sin. While the lusts of gain, in the form of lands, money, fine dress, horses &c, is most active, there is among them ~~a~~ most unconquerable aversion to that

labour which is the only lawful means of procuring the necessaries & luxuries of life. Hence unlawful means are resorted to; dishonesty in dealing, stealing, oppression, lying, and above all licentiousness. This is still the great master vice of this people & I fear its consequences will prove their utter ruin. No other vice creates so much mischief in our churches. Several respectable merchants of this place & two physicians have told me, they consider that four fifths of the money received in the retail shops here & at Lahaina, is the wages of licentiousness between foreigners & native women. This may be a large estimate, but I have no doubt there is much truth in it. Yet, so far as I have the means of judging, & they are not very limited, I believe a large majority of our people do not practically indulge in this vice. On the contrary they are active in endeavors to suppress it.

One recent case of discipline has occasioned a most painful sensation in our church & missionary circle; it is that of a person of no less consequence than Keikenui, who has been mentioned in former letters as being licensed to preach the Gospel. He is a man of about forty years of age; exhibits a pleasant open countenance & possess a good mind, though not much cultivated. As a speaker he is very respectable; easy, natural, & animated in his address, & always managed to illustrate his subject by something familiar to the minds of Hawaiians, though often coarse & grating to civilized ears.

After being licensed more than a year ago a field of labour was assigned him on the eastern wing of my parish stretching 4 or 5 miles along the coast, and containing 700 or 800 inhabitants. He entered upon his work with much zeal; the people, of whom at least 50 were professors of religion, soon began to flock to his standard; his little grass meeting house was full to overflowing;

an addition was built on to it of round poles, thatched with grass. Inquirers became numerous & the church got admirably awake. In short there was there a revival of religion. Things continued to prosper for six or seven months, & the people made up for Keikenui, a tollerable support by contribution.

But several, perhaps four months ago, a quarrel arose between Keikenui & his wife; she accused him of too great intimacy with another woman. Difficulties increased & they parted or rather she returned to her home in Honolulu. He declared his innocence & continued at his post; the affair was investigated in the church, but with no satisfactory result. About a month since, he was seized by the police in the same bed with the woman, brought to trial & convicted of adultery! The affair was re-investigated in the church & abundant evidence found of his fall into the condemnation of the devil. Such has been the brief career of the only licensed native preacher connected with my church. How sad! how discouraging, just when, in obedience to

the anxious wishes of the Board in view of our own weakened condition, we have been straining every nerve to bring forward a native ministry! This man was licensed with fear & trembling, the result of a long & intimate acquaintance with native character, & our fears have been fully realized. But I confess I did not expect, that if he fell, considering his age, & apparently tried character, & especially his powerful & pointed sermons on licentiousness, that his fall would be on this side. The event should not discourage further efforts to bring forth a native ministry, & yet it goes so strongly to confirm our general opinion of native character, that it cannot but operate as a damper on the feeling of all.

In one respect the effect is most unhappy, that is increasing the aversion of the natives towards native pastors or preachers. In the region where Keikenui laboured I find this aversion amounting almost to contempt ~~of all native preachers~~. They say, "none of our people are fit for this office"; they will not go thaigther & they support the argument by refering to ~~the~~ those who have promised well &

have been put forward to preach & have fallen into sin. The cases of Kekapala, Apii, Kapena & others once prominent & promising but now fallen, are pointed to. Yet they have, after some persuasion accepted the services of one Omalele, as a preacher on the old plan of an informal permit. Omalele is, I trust, a good man, & will exert a good influence as he has done uniformly; but his resources are small & he will soon run out.

There are one or two other good men in this church who might be employed as preachers, could their services be obtained. But they hold important stations as magistrates & it is doubtful, considering the scarcity of such men, whether they ought to leave their present vocations, for a work for which they are but indifferently qualified.

On the whole subject of a native ministry, I would say in sub-

stance what I have said before, that the Board cannot feel more anxious than we, to bring one forward into the field. You are urged on by a feeling of benevolence; we have not only this but selfishness to impel us forward in creating a native ministry; for we are fainting under the burden & heat of the day, & cherish with the utmost delight, every ray of hope of getting rid of even a part of our work. But the difference between us is, that you look on the subject in the light of a theory, while we view it in the light of facts & experience. However strongly we may desire a native ministry & we have aimed at it from the first, yet we can not go any faster than facts & experience will warrant. We cannot lay hands suddenly on any man, lest the gospel be dishonored, the cause of religion injured and our hearts "pierced with many sorrows". In my own experience I have found in several cases of putting forward the best qualified natives I could find, to teach, preach & watch over the flock, that they gave me more anxiety, care & vexation than to do the work myself; and withal disturbance

was created in the church, that years did not remove.

Let it be kept in mind also, that there are some excellent men in our churches who cannot be induced to engage in preaching or pastoral labours. Such an one is John Ii; another is Kaauwai, who has been one of the Supreme Judges and is now in the "Land Commission". Still I feel to the very core of my heart the importance of a native ministry & it shall be my purpose to advance this object, notwithstanding all discouragements, as fast as a sense of duty will allow me to. A regard to my own health, if no higher motive, urges me to it.

Your theory that missionaries are the successors of the apostles, & that we are not properly speaking pastors of our churches, may do very well as a theory; in fact, it is quite a discovery, & ought to be communicated to Bishop Doane, But as a practical matter in this part of the world, it will not do, to follow the example of the Apostles too closely. Paul might preach three years in Ephesus then ordain elders over the church and go on; but we should make sad work

to do so here. This is a very different people from the Ephesians. The Apostles felt justified in baptizing their converts on the same day of their conversion; following their example closely, there would scarcely be none an unbaptised person on the Sand. Islands. It is very possible that in China, the missionaries may do as the Apostles did; organize a church, place an "elder" over it & go on. But not so in Africa; not so in Greenland; not so at the Navigator Islands.

But if your idea be that we are to continue no longer as pastors of these churches, or acting pastors if you please, than is requisite to bring forward by the blessing of God, natives who are competent even in a moderate degree to take charge of them & sustain the cause, even under the general inspection of a missionary here and there I agree with you. But that time is not yet. And to expect such a result among a people so carnal, indolent, fickle, & degraded as were these, within 30 or 40 years, seems to me not warranted by any part of church history. I am not surprised nor discouraged, that we have no more nor better

native preachers. When I consider the original character & circumstances of the people, & the longer I live the deeper is my conviction of their awful moral degradation I am constrained to say "it is only by the grace of God, they are what they are." But the Board & the churches have not had our opportunities for observation & therefore cannot appreciate our sentiments; hence, no doubt, our operations seem to many intelligent persons as unwarrantably tardy. I have even seen a hint somewhere that we were probably unwilling to bring forward native pastors, lest we have to give place to them. But the fact, is if we had fifty good native preachers to day, they could all be placed over large churches & congregations, much to our relief & joy, without disturbing one of us.

In your letter of June 4th '47 just recd. by the "Minthel", you speak of discontinuing ere long, your large expenditure at these islands & then a few

mer letter you spoke of "urging our work to its results". At this I am not surprised; it is perfectly natural. But my decided opinion is that we shall imperatively need all you now allow us of both men & means for many years to come. I will not say however that a portion of what is now assigned to us, ought not to be transferred to China, & other Eastern missions. Perhaps it is duty to leave the cause here to suffer in a measure, for the sake of other more extensive & more needy fields, as the greater is more important than the less. All I mean is, that there never was a time when men & means could be employed with a ~~greater~~ brighter prospect of usefulness in the Sandwich Islands than now; & to cut us down will insure a proportional loss. I am sincerely glad the Committee has authorised us to employ all the funds we can collect here in addition to our allowance from home & I would not have you expect to alter this arrangement very soon.

During the current year, my people have contributed about

$500 for my support, but I find so many ways to dispose of this, that I hardly know what to do with it. In my own field I have three stone & adobie meeting houses ~~under way~~ in progress; one at Waikiki, another at Manoa, the third at Waialupe, all important out stations; where I have preached more or less for 7 years in the midst of stones, filth & fleas. These ~~will~~ houses will require all the means I can raise among my people during the current year; for they have another important matter on hand & that is to purchase a town clock for the tower of our large church, which will be of immense advantage to the place. It was proposed to the King & chiefs to finish out the steeple or tower which will cost $2300.00, provided the common people of the congregation would purchase a town clock; this was agreed to & the work is soon to be commenced. On the whole I consider my people liberal according to their means; but they are bad economists & therefore have less to give for religious purposes than they otherwise might have. This is emphatically true of the chiefs.

Should the pressure come upon you

so heavily that you must reduce our allow-
-ance within a short time, then it may
be well to consider whether your rules
ought not to be so modified, as to allow
missionaries here to do something for
their own support, to make up any "lack
of service" in the people. This I should
regret, but it may be the less of two evils.
I think were I thrown upon my
people absolutely as Mr Green is, they
would not see me suffer; but as it
is they do not feel the pressure suffici-
-ently heavy to bring them up to the mark.
So I think it would be with Mr Clark,
Hitchcock & others. But we would be
obliged to be more or less "entangled with
the affairs of this life", & this might lead
& probably would lead to some evil con-
-sequences. One grand difficulty in
getting a support from such a people,
is the fact, that our ~~style~~ style of living howe-
-ver humble, is so much above theirs,
that they cannot appreciate our wants.
They would consider us well off, when
actually suffering.

(You will be pained to hear that
our dear Bro. Richards lies at the point

of death; his desease is apoplexy. How his place is to be filled as "minister of in-struction" is a serious question. Something more than a hint has been given me that I might be invited to take that office, but no direct proposal has been made. On this subject, I would give a good deal to talk with you for an hour or two. To go into the business of government as Mr Richards did I could not think of for a moment; but if the office could be so modified as to allow its in-cumbent to devote his exclusive atten-tion to education, elementary Christian education, & have no other connexion with the gov! than what is necessary to carry forward schools, it would not appear to me so objectionable; this is just what we having been doing all along. My views would be to travel a good deal, lecture to parents & children, preach the Gospel, arouse public attention to the subject of education, & above all unite manual labour with all the schools. This is of great importance & can only

be effected by wisely directed & persevering effort. Our Seminaries too—all of them ought to be taken up & supported by the government; this was Mr. Richards opinion but he has not lived to carry it out. The school books too ought to be printed at the expense of the gov^t. & might be. All this would save some thousands a year of your funds & be so much clear gain.

But I am by no means clear in my own mind that it is my duty to accept the office if offered. The brethren are divided in sentiment on the subject, & I must look up for light to Him who is light. I have a great aversion to being an officer of government in any sense whatever, & yet I confess I should not wish to see this office filled by anyone who is not a tried friend of the nation & a Christian man. It is unspeakably important that the man who superintends our whole system of education should be a man who "seeketh not his own, but the things of Jesus Christ". I think the King will look to us to fill that office, at some rate or other,

but it may not be our duty, to accede to his wishes. One consideration, a selfish one too, would incline me to accept it, that is the travelling would suit me & probably be beneficial to my health, which is not good. Whatever may be my ultimate determination, I will endeavor to postpone it until after General Meeting. If we then have the Spirit of Christ, he will guide to a correct decision.

We are thankful for the Committees consent to visit California or Oregon; we both need recruiting much & there is no lack of opportunities, but we do not see how to get out at present. Perhaps a kind Providence will open the way before long. Mrs Armstrong enjoys better health than she did a year ago, but is subject to severe attacks of her complaint. Three or four months rest would probably do her ~~grat~~ good.

Many thanks to the good ladies in N. York for their kind proposal in regard to Caroline; she is well provided for by her Uncle; but we have four more daughters, coming on, who will need a helping hand by & by, besides three sons. Thank you for your kind offer to

do what you can for our children.

We are sorry to loose Bro. Forbes, for he has been a faithful, self denying & successful labourer. But Mrs Forbes' health has been such as greatly to abridge his usefulness for 2 or 3 years, past, & there is no prospect of any improvement in this climate.

Mrs Dibble too is a highly esteemed sister, whose loss we shall feel. But the Lords will be done. May He give us all grace to endure as good soldiers unto the end, & when we are removed raise up other & better men to take our places.

I do not remember whether I informed you in my previous letters of the distressing epidemic which prevailed on the islands, during the months of March, April & May last. It appeared first in the form of bilious fever, then of lung fever, and at this place proved distressing fatal. Many natives died within forty eight hours after their first attack. I often attended 3 & 4 funerals before leaving the burying ground. For a fortnight or three weeks

the deaths in this place were compu-
-ted at ten a day. But probably the
disease was not so fatal anywhere
else as here. Very few persons, natives
or foreigners, wholely escaped, but
among foreigners it was compara-
-tively harmless. This was much more
fatal than the influenza we had
in 1845.

My impression is that the decre-
ase of the population has been accele-
rated by these epidemics & been grea-
-ter within the past three years than
for many previous years. But while
the natives decrease, foreigners in-
-crease & advance in numbers,
wealth & power. What will be the
end of these tendencies? We all de-
-sire to see the natives rise, advance,
possess the land, & rule the land;
but at times, I confess, it looks as
though the white race, the "uni-
versal yankee nation", had got

the ascendency & will keep it. I would not have it so, but so it seems to be. Oregon & California are filling up & that will create much intercourse with these islands & doubtless will tend to fill the islands with foreigners.

If you read the Polynesian, the gov. organ, you will see, it advocates strongly to speedy introduction of foreigners to the islands & argues that this will be beneficial to the natives. Were this not the case, foreigners would come at <u>any rate</u>; for whatever may be the policy of the government, they <u>will get in</u>, if there are inducements for them to settle here. The whole foreign corps of diplomats too are doing all they can to open the door for foreigners, & <u>all of course</u> with the <u>most benevolent intentions towards the natives</u>. So that on the whole, I do expect, unless things take a turn, that we shall have a mixed population over the islands, and that the wealth & power of the country will be eventually in the hands of the white man. I would have it otherwise, but I cannot close my eyes -

to facts. I perceive too to my surprise that the chiefs are quite willing to have it so. One of them said to me this morning, "Why do you send your children to America? we want them here". But dont you see, said I, that if they remain they will eventually supersede the natives"? "Let them, said he, for they are the better race; besides, we have but few children & will soon run out at any rate".

This leads me to remark, that it will become us to see that the white population is supplied with the gospel. Could a suitable man be sent out at once to Honolulu, & partially supported for a season, he would have no contemptable field of usefulness, & the indirect influence of his labours on the natives, if successful would be most happy. Several influential residents have spoken to me on this subject, & expressed a strong desire to see the thing brought about. Some I think would contribute liberally. After all, if we can have the kingdom of God among all classes, it matters not so much, what race inhabits the land.

I beg you will keep this suggestion in mind for I think at our general meeting we must look at the spiritual wants of foreigners & you may hear from us on the subject.

Oct. 21. To day, I learn, ~~that~~ there are some pleasing indications for good in my church. A spirit of prayer is abroad in some places; without my being aware of it; a company of good old native women have lately held a prayer meeting in the basement story of ~~the~~ our large church, before the dawn of day, every morning, so as to be uninterrupted & to get through before the secular duties of the day come on. These are mothers in Israel, whose prayers & sympathies have held up my hands for seven years past, more than any other class in the church. Religion is their element & if I mistake not they will walk with us in white, if we ever reach the "city of our God". Several interesting young people also attended my inquiry meeting yesterday. On the whole I consider that the cause of God our Redeemer is steadily advancing among us & notwithstanding all the temptations

of this place, & they are numerous & great, the blessed gospel takes firmer & firmer hold of the people.

The Romanists are very quiet & I do not think they are doing much. The Abbe Maigret has gone to Valparaiso; to be consecrated Bishop of this archipelago.

Since writing the above I have seen your letter to Dr. Judd. I think it has made a pleasant impression upon his mind & I am glad you wrote. I have urged both him & Mr Richards to exchange thoughts with you occasionally. The Dr is not just the man we wish he was, but on the whole I think he intends to act the Christian & prove to the world that his purposes are upright. I think it will be well to exchange letters with him occasionally.

Nov. 1. The thing I feared has come upon me. On the 28th of Oct. I received a request from the King & privy council to take the place of Mr Richards, as minister of instruction. I have seen several seasons of trial within the 42 years ~~of my life~~ I have lived in this world, but at no time have I ever been so weighed down with responsibilities & perplexities as at present. On the one hand, there is the instruction of the rising generation of these islands - their last, their only hope. How are schools to be sustained unless by the aid of government? I confess I cannot see. And yet where is there a man out of the mission, who knows the language & is otherwise competent to superintend the general interests of education? Should it fall into the hands of one who is not governed by religious principle, or who would as soon Romanism would prevail as any other religion, the result must be most unfavorable for our cause; for this office will exert a great influence over the young all over the islands. But the great difficulty in securing a competent man, who

is not a missionary, is the *want of a thorowledge of the language & of native character*. As to putting a native in the office that has been fairly tried, & proved unsuccessful; no one thing has made so many catholics as the difficulties arising between these school agents (natives) & the parents, teachers & scholars. The Jesuits hold a drag net wide open for every one in the least displeased or disaffected. Mr Andrews (that is Lorain) has been proposed, but he was not accepted for reasons I would rather not mention.

But on the other hand, there ~~are~~ strong objections to a missionaries holding office of any kind under government. The world will use the fact to our disadvantage, whatever may be the nature of the office. Some of the brethren refuse to advise me at all; others are decidedly in favor of my accepting; an equal number perhaps are opposed to it. All this confounds me: it makes me nervous & almost sick. Honestly I do not wish the office; my present post is an important one only *too laborious* in this climate, & I have no wish to leave it.

But I have a month in which to consider the subject, & give a definite

reply; in the mean time I have con-sented to devote a portion of my time to the assistance of Mr Young, the primier, in relieving the schools from their pre-sent embarrassment. It is possible I may succeed in getting the final decision of the matter put off, until our General Meeting, when we can consider it together. I am not sure but that the government will withdraw from any connection with the schools whatever; one or two influential members of it, favor that idea. If it should do so, I see no way of supporting them; they must go down. This would be a death blow to the prospects of the nation. The Lord guide us in this thing.

I will now request that you let me have the views of the Pru. Committee on this subject as soon as possible. They are good & great men & their opinion I will ever esteem as valuable.

I ought to have added before, that there are 19 schools in my district; containing 730 scholars. They never on the whole appeared better than now, owing to the teachers being promptly paid they are efficient for natives, and

most of them are advancing in quali-
-fications for their work, as the scholars
improve under them. But we greatly
need better school houses. Some of the
older pupils are in an interesting state
of mind. I cannot but hope the Spirit
of God is among them. Some of the girls
recite each Sabbath from 100 to 200 verses
of the scriptures a piece & seem to take
great delight in it.

News of the "good work" in Persia
& Turkey is having a good effect upon
our people; it makes the hearts of God's
people rejoice. O that he may pour
out his Spirit upon all flesh
until all the earth shall see the sal-
-vation of our God.

Mr Richards is still living and
may live a long time; but the physicians
despair of his ever recovering.

Mrs Armstrong unites with me
in Christian regards to yourself & family
& all your colleagues.

Affec'ly yours
Richard Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong,
Honolulu, Oct. 10. 1847.
Rec. Dec. 12. 1847.

Honolulu. Nov. 27. 1847.

Rev. R. Anderson;

My dear Brother;

In a letter I wrote you about a month ago, I stated that a request had been placed in my hands by the Hawaiian government, to accept the appointment of "Minister of public Instruction", in the place of our lamented brother Richards, who died on the 7th of the present month. Knowing how you and the Board feel in regard to your missionaries holding offices of government, of any kind, I hasten to inform you that I have concluded to decline the appointment. This conclusion is the result of much reflection, prayer and painful solicitude in regard to the cause of education; and also of correspondence with my brethren. Among them there is much diversity of sentiment in regard to what is my duty; some quite in favor of accepting, others quite opposed to it. But on the whole I think the voice of the mission is against accepting the office & I know of no better indication as to the will of Providence than this.

There are strong reasons for accepting in my own mind & also strong reasons for refusing; and

the difficulty has been to ballence them. On the one hand there are 18,000 children in the schools supported by government, & to superintend their instruction, provide means for erecting school houses, paying teachers, adjusting difficulties, and exerting a strong & steady Christian influence upon them, is a matter of immense importance. I cannot endure the thought of having these schools come under mere secular influence; the welfare of Zion as well as of the State demands that they be kept under a good, protestant, religious influence. Here I think is the great hope of the Hawaiian race; it is the only anchor that remains. Then again, the King, chiefs & all the foreign officers are united in the choice. They are very urgent indeed; they have implored me to accept the office with an importunity that has touched my heart. Paki, the King's chamberlain said to me a day or two since, "You are the only man we are united in; have compassion on us in our troubles; we have but little money, but you are welcome to all we have if you will only take the office". There is no doubt in the minds of the chiefs much regard to the mere political welfare of the nation, as well as to education & hence I make a good deal of allowance for their strong feelings. The foreigners in the government are very urgent & plead the wants of a religious influence about the palace as a collateral argument.

Probably also Mr. A. will enjoy better health in that employment than where he is, as Mr. A. will have to travel a good deal, so Mrs. Armstrong. Neither of us are in very good health.

"This office includes that of chaplain to the King's household, which is very important; since Mr. Richards has been laid aside & Dr. Judd has removed to the country, the King has not conducted so well; he has been intoxicated a number of times & as I am informed has been licentious. It is partly on his account that the pious Chiefs are so urgent in this matter.

But on the other hand, when I consider the strong feeling that exists in the Board & the churches, against miss. holding govt. offices; the diversity of sentiment among my brethren on the subject & the difficulty of filling my place in this important church, I have come to the conclusion, to decline the offer & remain as I am. Yet my mind is not so well satisfied as I wish it was; for there are vast interests at stake in the schools & the spiritual welfare of the chiefs. O how we feel the loss of our dear Mr. Richards in that quarter.

What the govt. will do, I cannot say. There is no man out of the mission, who can fill the office, except Lorrain Andrews, & there is a strong opposition to him among the chiefs; they have tried him as a judge & found him dull of hearing, weak and inefficient & not at all competent for the office. So they tell me. C. B. Andrews of Molokai has been talked of & may possibly be chosen. You will hear in due time.

Most affd. & truly yours R. Armstrong.

P.S. This will be forwarded via India in the despatches of Commissioner Ten Eyck. There are about 50 ships now in our harbour, but all is quiet.

Rev. Rufus Anderson D.D.
"Missionary House,"
Pemberton Square,
Boston.

10

APR

Rev. Richard Armstrong
Honolulu, Nov. 27, 1848.
Recd. May 2, 1849.
Ans. June 17

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

87. A.L. to R. Anderson; 9 Dec. 1847
88. A.L. to R. Anderson; 31 Jan. 1848
89. A.L. to A. Ten Eyck; 28 Feb. 1848
90. Ten Eyck, A.L. to R. Armstrong; 2 March, 1848

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Honolulu, Decr 9. 1847

To Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

My dear Brother;

I wrote you by way of China on the 27th of Novr, informing you of my conclusion to decline the office of "minister of public instruction", offered me by this government. On that day I sent in my letter, & urged the appointment of Lorrain Andrews (now Judge), thinking & hoping that I had done with this perplexing affair. But I was mistaken. Although there has been much discussion & deliberation in the King's council, & several candidates proposed, no one is elected; the office is still vacant. Judge Andrews is an excellent man; no one more unexceptionable in his walk & conversation; he is much respected in the place, & I think is exerting a good influence; But as a business man he is very deficient

The chiefs have had a trial of him & there is no use in urging them further to appoint him minister of instruction. I did not recommend him because he is the best man that can be thought of for the post, but because on the whole, there would be less objection to his taking the office, than to my taking it. He is the only man out of the mission who can be thought of.

Seeing the embarrassment of the government & feeling much sympathy for the chiefs, who have beset me very strongly, even imploringly, in order to prevail on me to take the office, I offered, as the least I could do to render some assistance in it, under Mr Young until General Meeting. In a day or two the following resolution was handed me by Judge Lee (now Supreme Judge of the islands & member of the privy council) "Resolved, That the Rev. R. Armstrong's offer to assist the minister of ~~public instruction~~ the interior, till the next General Meeting be accepted, and that if he can then obtain the consent of his brethren, he be appointed to the office of Minister of Public Instruction!!

Mr Young, the minister of the interior, has had charge of the schools, since the month of

August. Since the receipt of the above resolution I have devoted the forenoon of each day to the department of instruction. I find much disorder there & many things calling loudly for attention. In some places a large amount of funds appropriated for schools has been embezzled by petty collectors & local school agents; a majority of the school houses are bad, & in some places there are none at all. The accounts too of the department are in much confusion. But I shall do my utmost even at the expense of health, to keep things along until Genl. Meeting, when I hope, some one of the mission will take the office, or that it may be dropped. Either alternative will be unpleasant, but I am satisfied that this will be the alternative. If my place in this church can be well supplied, I may think it best to yield to the wishes of the government & accept the office; if I do, it will be to me a great trial. The salary is $3.000 a year, but when its precariousness is considered in connection with my large family, and the expense of living here, this is no temptation.

Seeing the importance of our schools, & the present prostrate condition of some of them for want of attention, the brethren seem more inclined than they were to approve of my taking the office. Several advise me decidedly to do it at once & commit my way to the Lord,

But I prefer to wait & have the subject discussed in our meeting; it calls for our united wisdom.

In connection with this subject I think much of what you say in regard to reducing the sum allowed to our mission. What will become of our seminaries, boarding schools & the press, when that day arrives, unless means are provided here for their support? My idea is that some thousands of acres of these waste lands should now be appropriated to educational purposes & it may be done, by the blessing of God, if there is some one to attend to it. The chiefs are very blind on such matters & it will require much time & labour to effect it.

The whole subject has lain with great weight upon my mind; it is closely connected with the welfare of the nation, & of Zion — with the reputation of our mission & my own personal welfare. But I have daily endeavored to lay it before God and ask his counsel in regard to my duty. I have besought him to decide the question for me, & not leave me to my own blindness; & I have now a confidence that in his Providence he will make my duty & that of the mission plain.

Mrs Richards is being handsomely provided for by the government. She will need no aid from the mission or the Board.

The state of religion in my field is about mediocrity. Temperance advances; we have had an unusual number of ships this fall, 90 in our harbour at a time; but the town has been very quiet withal.

Affly & truly yours R. Armstrong.

P. S. I send this by the hand of Sherman Peck Esq. a merchant of Lahaina, & a very worthy gentleman & a friend to our mission. He returns home with his family, after having made a little fortune here by trading. Mr P. will no doubt call on you; indeed he has promised to do so, & give you his views of things at the islands. He seems decidedly in favor of my accepting the vacant office. With Mrs Peck you will be much pleased; she was a Hopkins, of the good old Puritan stock. We esteem her much.

Mr Jarves, editor of the Polynesian, is soon to sail for Boston. Perhaps you have read his history (new edition) of the islands & noticed what he says of our leaving the Board & seeking support here. See the latter part. This is the only way unless the Board can continue our support. These churches will probably never be able to give us a support, at least for a long time to come. The native race will disappear before the time arrives, I fear. On one land on Kauai, there have been 24 deaths and only one birth during the present year! Other like cases have come to my knowledge.

But foreigners are coming in & calling for these waste lands & they will soon have them. Many however of the poor natives will be saved; yes, I trust a multitude of them. Blessed thought.

Yours W. S. R. Armstrong

Rev. Richard Armstrong.

Honolulu, Dec. 9, 1847

Rec'd. May 20, 1848.

Ans'd June 17.

Education —

Support of Missionaries by the Islands.

Revd. Rufus Anderson D.D.
Missionary House,
Pemberton Square,
Boston.

SHIP.

NEW LONDON CONN. 19

17

Honolulu, Jan. 31. 1848.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

My dear Brother;

Mr Jarves, late editor of Polynesian, is to leave tomorrow for the U. States via Panama, which affords me an opportunity to address you a few lines. As I informed you in my last, I consented to assist Mr Young, acting Minister of instruction, in that department until Genl. Meeting, hoping by that time light may dawn upon this perplexing subject. On looking into the office, I found things in much confusion as might be expected. On Hawaii particularly the schools were suffering from neglect & by the request of Mr Young I sailed for that island about the last of December. I found the mission families generally well on that island, & the brethren labouring hard at their posts. I saw nothing of special interest in the churches, & yet nothing particularly discouraging appeared, except the rapid decrease of the population by death and emigration; this occasions also a decrease in the number of church members. The emmigration from that island to Oahu is very great & very

disasterous in its influence.

The schools for want of a head have suffe-red greatly; a heavy debt has been incurred by the government, & most of the schools have been partially or wholely suspended for want of funds to support them. The grand difficulty in carrying on a system of national schools is the want of suitable native agents in the different districts to collect the school reve-nue & pay it over to the teachers.

After a months absence I returned home yesterday & found to my exceeding joy a great awakening among my dear people. How much of it is the Lords work, time will tell; experience has taught me to think soberly & speak cautiously of these excite-ments; but appearences are certainly very encouraging. Our large meeting house has been very full for three Sabbaths past, & yesterday, the people could not all cro-wd into the house, much less get seats. And yet the large assembly was perfectly still & wakefully attentive to the word of life. Meetings are held every morning at the dawn of day & the house is well filled; crowds come in who are entire strangers to me although they live in the village close by me. The prayers of Christians are fervent & indicate much love to the

Saviour & the souls of men. And yet I do not see that deep conviction & sorrow for sin that I wish to. This is where Hawaiians usually fail most. I am happy to say the King, Queen & all the chiefs appear to be interested in this work, & are almost daily seen in the house of God. It is interesting to see his Majesty become a Sabbath school scholar, as he has of late, with his Queen & chiefs around him, studying the word of God.

I have no new thoughts to offer in regard to the vacant office; my mind is pretty well made up to accept of it, unless the mission see fit to veto my doing so; in that case I shall remain where I am. I have given the subject mature consideration; have prayed over it much & consulted many of the wise in regard to it, & it is clear to my mind that the office had better be dropped unless one of our number will take it; a suitable person cannot be found out of the mission to fill it; they do not understand the native language nor the native character. The natives, chiefs & people wish & ask for a missionary to be "minister of pub. instruction." This feeling, I think, is universal. To let our schools go down, wd. be to let slip our last anchor for the nation or the church & I do think God calls upon us

to sustain them, whatever a gainsaying world may say. The priests are opposing my appointment with much zeal I understand.

With kind regards to your associates & your family,

I am your aff. Br. in the Lord
Richard Armstrong

10

Revd Rufus Anderson D.D.
"Missionary House"
Boston

By politeness of
J. G. James Esq.

VERA CRUZ
10 MAY 17

Rev. Richard Armstrong
Vera Cruz, Jan. 24, 1848
Recd June 5
Ansd June 7

Honolulu, Feb. 28. 1848

To Anthony Ten Eyck Esq.

Sir;

I deem it my duty to call your attention to the enclosed copy of an article published in the "Plain Dealer" daily newspaper, of Cleveland, Ohio. Letters just received from the U. States inform me that you are the ~~author~~ writer of said article and my only object in bringing it thus early before your mind, is to enable you to anticipate & if possible prevent any unhappy results which might follow from its becoming public here.

I cannot but indulge the hope that you will peruse the article as I have done with much regret, and that on reflection you will be ready to recall the misstatement it contains & thus subserve at once the cause of truth & peace.

I am with sentiments of esteem
Your humble
Servt.
R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong, to
1st Letter to Mr. ~~Ten Eyck~~. Mr. Ten Eyck.
Honolulu, Feb. 28, 1848.

Rec^d Aug. 22, — "

Ans^d. Oct. 14

Honolulu March 2d 1848

Sir;

In acknowledging the receipt of your note of the 28th ultimo, with the enclosed copy of an article published in the "Plain Dealer", newspaper of Cleveland, Ohio, I must say, 1st That I deny your right, upon any recognized principle of etiquette, to interrogate me on the subject matter to which your note refers, & that your clerical character alone, deters me from characterising your note in such terms as, in my view, it deserves. 2d That I deny your right to assume I am the author of the article to which you refer, without positive knowledge & this knowledge, I know, you could not have, from the simple fact that I am not the author. In making this latter statement I wish you to understand most distinctly, that I fully concur in some of the views which the author has expressed & so concurring, I cannot with truth, say with you, that I have perused the article with much regret. Having made no "misstatement" I have nothing to "recall" & therefore there is no danger in this instance at least, that I shall injure "the cause of truth & peace".

I regret I have not time to write all I could wish in further reply to your note

In great haste, I am Yours &c.

(Signed) A. Ten Eyck.

Rev. R. Armstrong.

A. Ten Eyck Esq. to Rev. R. Armstrong

(Copy) Mr. Ten Eyck's 1st letter to me.

Honolulu, March 2, 1848.

Rec'd. Aug. 22, — "

Ans'd. Oct. 14

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

91. Armstrong, R. A.L. to A. Ten Eyck; 3 March 1848
92. Ten Eyck, A. A.L. to R. Armstrong; 3 March 1848
93. Armstrong, R. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 March 1848

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Honolulu, March 3. 1848.

To A. Ten Eyck Esq.

Sir;

Your letter of the 2d. inst. has just been received & I have only now to give you my authority for supposing you to be the author of the article referred to as published in the "Plain Dealer" & my reasons for addressing you as I did in my note of the 28th of Feby. They are contained in the following letter of S.C. Aikin D.D. of Cleveland to R. Anderson D.D. of Boston.

(Here copied the entire letter of Dr. Aikin)

Another letter relating to the same subject is by me, but I have not time† just now to transcribe it. You will now judge, Sir, whether or not I had reason for addressing you in the friendly manner I did on the 28th of Feb. My object was as I said, to subserve the cause of truth & peace.

Truly Your

obt. Servt.

R. Armstrong.

† Mr. Ten Eyck was then just embarking for Christmas Island, where part of his family is in distress, having been wrecked on their way to U. States.

Rev. R. Armstrong
to
Mr. Ten Eyck,

Honolulu, March 3, 1848

Rec.d Aug. 22.

Ans Oct. 14.

2d Letter to Mr. Ten Eyck.

Honolulu, March 3. 1848.

Sir;

In reply to your letter of this date I have to say, that I do not doubt you fully believed me to be the author of the article which has induced this correspondence; I do not doubt either, but your friends in the U. S. from whom you have received letters believe the same thing. Still I repeat, I am not the author of the article, a copy of which you enclosed me in your letter of the 28th. ultimo.

My opinions in regard to the effect of the teachings of the Christian religion, upon the native population & in reference to their present position in the scale of Christianity & civilization, as also, my opinions in regard to the policy & some of the acts of this govt. while John Ricord was one of its officers & had "paramount influence", are not unknown here, & have been fully & unguardedly expressed in many of my private letters to my numerous friends in the U. S. In no instance have I written any thing for publication in the public press. Should any thing I may have written to any of my friends, find its way into the press, contrary to my expressed inclination, it will be my candid opinions, expressed in the full confidence of private unguarded friendship, & if erroneous, can be easily rectified by the truth. Be assured that whatever I have written has been written for the sake of truth alone & while

experience continues to confirm my individual opinions, I shall not be backward in my efforts to sustain them.

If we were liable to be called to account for every thing written or said in the confidence of private friendship, I doubt whether the cause of peace or even of truth, would be thereby promoted. I make this general remark that you may understand, I do not intend to permit myself to be interrogated upon any matter which others may think fit to suspect me of having written for the press in the U. S.

I am
Your obt.
Servt.
(Signed) — A. Ten Eyck

A. Ten Eyck,
to
Rev. R. Armstrong.
Honolulu March 3, 1848.
Rec. Aug. 12, "
Ack. Oct. 14

Mr. Ten Eyck's letter
to me.

Honolulu, March 10. 1848.

Revd. R. Anderson D. D. }
Mifs.y House, Boston }

My dear Brother;

Your favor of Oct 18. 1847 reached me on the 26th of last Month, together with the "Plain Dealer" & copy of a letter from Dr Aikin to yourself. In sending these documents you did well. We need to know how public men around us, feel & write about us & our work.

On reading the article in the "Plain Dealer" together with Dr. Aikins letter, little or no doubt could rest on the mind of any one as to who is the author. The attack being so sweeping & outrageous as you say, "upon all that is dear to us at the island"; by one whom we have uniformly treated with respect, & when in affliction with sympathy, it seemed to call for some notice. My first thought was to write a review of it for the Polynesian, but on reflection, it seemed the better way, to address Mr. Ten Eyck privately & kindly on the subject & thus open the way for him to escape honorably from a very unpleasant predicament. Nothing could be lost by this, even if it should bring out Mr. T. as an open & avowed enemy. Having come to this conclusion, the enclosed correspondence took

place, which will explain itself.

Mr. T.'s last letter to me you will observe, is of a much milder tone than the first, & if I read him right, it means in plain English, "that he wrote unguardedly to a private friend just what he thought & if it has got into the papers, he is not the author of it, as he did not write it for the press." This quibble may satisfy his mind, but I question, if it will any one else.

It has been said of Mr. T. that "he is easily led by those about him". This is probably true & forms the clue to an understanding of his present position. Shortly after his arrival here, he espoused warmly the rotten cause of the fallen & unhappy Mr. Turnside & his associates, boarded for a long time with Mr. Hooper & associated mostly with those who sympathised with that concern. This was, in my view, an unfortunate step for him; in as much as it was departing from the strict line of his duty, unnecessarily embroiling himself with the government, and the worst of all for him was, he was completely defeated. Hence his bitterness towards the King's foreign officers, the instrument of his defeat. Those who adhere to that clique, being unfriendly to the mission, it was natural that he should imbibe more or less of their spirit; but I did not expect he wd. go so far as to pronounce us all unprincipled, reporting what we know is untrue.

Mr. T. evidently has no heart here; he seems

to be disgusted with every thing.

Last evening I had a confidential interview with Judge Turrill, who spent the evening at my house; we talked this matter over & the Judge (who you know is our Consul) expressed himself as highly displeased at Mr Ten Eycks letter & in fact with his general course here. The two are evidently wide apart, the former being a warm friend of the government & the mission. In a note to day he informs me that he has written some of his views to Mr Hill, wh. I hope you will see. This may be just the "refuting evidence" you need. Mr Turril was in College with Mr Bingham, was 4 years in Congress & is a personal friend of the President.

Should you think these attacks need to be publicly met, I wd. suggest that you call on Mr Jarves to do it; he will be with you & no one can do the subject more justice. Being implicated he may like to do it.

The article in the "Plain Dealer" will be published in the "Polynesian" with a review of it. This is in progress. As Mr T. denies that he wrote it, of course he cant feel hit.

The revival in my field, of which I wrote you a few weeks since, is still in progress. We have increasing & delightful evidence, day by day, that the Spirit is being poured out upon us from on high. Our large meeting house

is so crowded on Sabbath mornings, that many cannot get seats & stand during the whole time of service. But it is easy to preach even to this great assembly (supposed last Sabbath to be 2500 or 3000), there being so fixed & solemn attention to the word. I have been holding district protracted meetings throughout my field; & ~~always~~ nowhere will the houses contain the people. New, neat, & substantial meeting houses have been erected ~~at~~ Waikiki, four miles to the eastward & in the beautiful valley of Manoa; & in both I have just been labouring with great encouragement. At the former place, the church members gave place to inquirers, during a day devoted to religious exercises last week; & the latter about filled the large house. We continued our meetings, with only a few minutes interruption to take a lunch, from 10. A.M. till 4 P.M., & there seemed to be no weariness, & no flagging. The King is evidently seeking the Lord, but we rejoice over him with trembling. He is now on a visit to Maui. There is now a great demand for Bibles & Testaments; I have sold more within a month than I did in all the year 1847. The Spirit works through the word.

We are pleased with the new reinforcement; we bless God for it; for we need help exceedingly. My family is in pretty good health; my own health is not very good.

Aff [illegible]
Yours in the Lord R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong,
Honolulu, March 10, 1848.
Rec'd August 22 "
Ans'd [illegible]

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong
~~Anderson,~~ Richard

94. A.L.to R. Anderson; 24 May 1848
95. A.L. to R. Anderson; 7 Sept. 1848
96. A.L. to R. Anderson; 21 Dec. 1848
97. A.L. to R. Anderson; 13 Jan. 1849
98. A.L. to R. Anderson; 4 May 1869

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong
~~Anderson,~~ Richard

99. A.L. to R. Anderson; 4 Sept. 1849
100. A.L. to R. Anderson; 30 Nov. 1849
101. A.L. to R. Anderson; 18 Apr. 1850
102. A.L. to R. Anderson; 24 Oct. 1850
103. A.L. to R. Anderson; 18 Feb. 1851
104. A.L. to R. Anderson; 31 Mar. 1851

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Honolulu, May 24, 1848.

To Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Miss. House, Boston

My dear Brother;

You have heard before this, no doubt, of the death of our dear Bro. Richards & that I had a call from the government to fill his place as "minister of instruction". This appointment was tendered me on the 28th of October last, but as I have written you it was declined at that time. The government not being able to procure a suitable person out of our mission circle to fill the office, renewed the request that I accept it ~~the~~ office. This I could not do, but consented to assist in the department until our Genl. Meeting, & then refer it to the brethren. This I did last week & the subject was taken up with great earnestness; some strongly opposing my acceptance

of the office; others as strongly advocating it. A good spirit pervaded the discussion, but both parties were very decided and some felt strongly. The body was completely divided, & lest the matter might lead to a division of the mission & the prostration of our schools, I at length after four days discussion, concluded to assume the whole responsibility of deciding to accept the office, & put an end to the matter. Of course all are not pleased with this step, but I think a majority of the brethren are quite satisfied with it & I feel sure that the others will be in due time, if God give me grace.

The posture of affairs was just this, "a missionary must accept the office or it would be abolished & the schools be thrown on voluntary support as they were 10 years ago. This all admitted would reduce them at once to one half their number & turn out into darkness & sin 10,000 children. For this few of us are prepared; it would be a step back into heathenism indefinitely & fill all our minds with discouragement in regard to the nation & our churches. Of the 19.000 children now in the schools 17.000 are Protestant; over these the mission

has complete control, & can teach the young just what it pleases. Throw the school on voluntary support and the Romanists have every advantage, for their element is darkness, while in thorough Christian education they are no match for Protestants. I came to the conclusion therefore that the aggregate of good would be much greater if I accepted than if I rejected this appointment. This is contrary to your advice I am aware, but when properly informed of the circumstances I am confident you will not censure me. It is a subject in regard to which good & wise men may differ; it is so here & it may be so with you. But my own mind, after 7 months prayerful reflection & consultation with all classes of persons, is clear, that I can do more good in superintending the schools, than remaining as pastor of the 1st church. Coupled with this office is the King's chaplaincy, which is of itself of great importance, as the King is now I hope, one of Christ's lambs. He appears very well indeed.

Other brethren will write you & from all, you will get every phase of the subject. I will send you when an opportunity occurs, my views of the subject at greater

length, in the Memorial wh. I presented to the mission.

I have now only to ask a dismission from the service of the Board, which it gives me pain to ask; for in your service I have ever been happy & my confidence in the Board has ever increased since my first connexion with it.

My place in the 1st Church will ~~prob-ably~~ be supplied by Bro. Clark, which will prevent his going home, as he can have his large family educated in the School at Punahou. This the mission will gain rather than loose by my leaving. I shall continue to preach in the church as it is the "King's chapel", but Bro. C. will have the pastoral care.

The report read before the Meeting shows a most cheering state of religious feeling in the churches. This is a year of revivals.

This will go via Mazatlan, by favor of the British Consul.

Please send my dismission as soon as convenient.

With sentiments of Christian regard
I remain as ever yours
in the Lord
Richard Armstrong

P.S. When you see my correspondence with the brethren you will be convinced that many of them view this subject as I do.

Rev. Richard Armstrong
Honolulu, Aug. 20. 1848
Recd. Feb. [illegible]

Honolulu, Sep.r 7. 1848.

Rev.d & dear Brother;

That you may be fully informed, of the course pursued & the result, in reference to the office of Minister of Public Instruction tendered to me last Nov.r I send you herewith, my memorial presen-ted before the mission & also a duplicate of a letter of several of the brethren. I hardly expect you will read all these documents; still, it may be well for you to have them. I hope & expect, the Board will take a liberal view of my case; it w.d grieve me exceedingly, to give pain

to those I so much love and esteem.

I am now fairly embarked in the cause of education, with a fair prospect of success. The work is vast; teachers being very deficient; far too few in number, & far too low in qualifications. School houses are mostly wretched huts, not suitable for human beings to inhabit. So that it will require years of toil & perseverance to put the schools in any thing like good order. But the disposition of the government is liberal & I expect to devote my whole time to education, sound, practical, christian

education.

So far as I know, the best feelings exist between myself & the brethren of the mission; & on my part no effort shall be wanting to perpetuate this good understanding.

One thing occupies many of my thoughts, "how are Christian in-stitutions to be sustained at the Sand. Islands, without the aid of the Am. Churches?

The two objects now before the mind of the government is the sale of land in fee simple to natives, & education cou-pled with manual labour.

Although in a separate

sphere of labour from that I have heretofore occupied & I shall be happy to continue correspondence with you as far as circumstances will permit.

Mr Clark has arrived & is well received by the people. He & I will see alike I trust.

The chiefs never appeared more correct & orderly in their lives, than now.

Ever yours

aff. bro.

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu, Sept. 7. 1848
Rec. Jan. 22. 1849.
Ackd. Aug. 11th.

96

(Confidential.)

Honolulu, Decr. 21. 1848.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

My dear Sir;

Perhaps the feeling arises from long habit; but at any rate I have an inclination to write you a short letter before the ships have all left port.

You will hear from the brethren of the mission of the distressing sickness & frightful mortality that has prevailed over the islands of late. It has cast a gloom over our prospects, such as we never before witnessed. The question is no longer a doubtful one, whether the Hawaiian race is to prevail on their native soil; in my mind, it is decided, that such is not their destiny. But we have consolation in the thought, that many of them have been saved, eternally saved; & many more we trust will be. Perhaps, after all, the aggregate number of souls saved from these Islands, may prove to be equal to those of any of your missions, of equal extent & duration.

The King continues to be serious, is very attentive to Christian instruction

holds family worship, & his walk is that of an upright man. He & the Queen have both been very sick of the measles, but they are now in usual health.

This weeks paper will show you the state of our political affairs. The foreign relations of the govt. are still somewhat disturbed & I fear they always will be. The reason is the government is weak on the one hand & the cupidity of foreigners is great on the other. Foreign officials do things here, they wd. not think of attempting under more powerful governments. Unless they get what they want, they complain, make up grievances & become hostile to those who direct the affairs of the government. The French Consul is pursuing a most extraordinary course, in making demands in regard to the sale of brandy, custom house regulations, & openly at-tempting to form a new ministry. He is not backward either to espouse the cause of Roman-ism, & I have no doubt, he will do what he can to aid the French priests, by force if he cannot gain his points by diplomacy. When you see the correspondence between him & Mr. Wyllie, I think you will say, his course is a most extraordinary one. The government will stand its ground, I think, come what will; for we have seen the consequences of concessions to unreason-able demands. He wishes the priests to have more

sway over the schools, but rather than suffer any foreign interference we will swing clear of the schools altogether. It may not come to this & I hope it will not, but if it should, such will be the result. His conduct is represented to the French Government, & also to the Govt. of England & the U. States.

All official intercourse with Ten Eyck has been suspended by order of the King; the cause writing for the "S. I. News", such articles (only worse) as appeared in the "Plain Dealer". The manuscript of the worst of them has been obtained for money, from the foreman printer in the News office & is in Ten Eyck's hand-writing, beyond question. The affair has occasioned a good deal of excitement, & the 3 foreign officials have in person, jointly represented the conduct of Dr. Judd who obtained the manuscript, to the King.

Can you not now manage to have our present Consul Hon. Joel Turrill, appointed sole representative of Am. interests here. He is a wise, and good (in a worldly sense) old gentleman, a favorite with the King & govt. & in my view understands better than any one here what is for the real good of all who dwell on these shores, or come here for trade. I do wish he could be appointed, as sole agent for the U. S. here & I have written Hon. James Pollock, a member of Congress & companion of my youth, to this effect.

In a letter some two years ago, I suggested to you, that we wd. like a visit from you.

This, I now repeat. It seems to me very important that you or some other member of the Board, be here at the next Genl. meeting of the mission. You cannot be made to understand the state of things by letter, so as to form a proper judgement of them. It seems to me, the time has come to make some important changes in the rules of the mission, or this land will ere long will become again a land of darkness. Those who have families will either return home soon or conclude to settle here; if the latter course be adopted it is time they were looking out for means of living. The government, I think, will be liberal to all who wish to settle on the islands: in fact, the govt. is more willing to grant lands to the children of the mission, than the latter are to accept of them. Should a good number of the families settle here, they will form a fine moral nucleus for future times which, it may be hoped, perpetuate the good institutions their fathers have planted.

So that I most cordially invite you to make us a visit & I hope you will not pass the matter by without serious consideration.

With affectionate regards to your family & colleagues I remain as ever.

Your brother in the Lord.

R. Armstrong

Mr. Armstrong
Honolulu, Dec. 31. 1858.
Rec'd May 17. 1859
Ans'd Aug. 11th

Honolulu, Jan ~~14~~ 13 1849.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother;

Your correspondence is so extensive & burdensome, that it is with some hesitation that I write you, a word in addition to my letter sent by way of California a few days ago. In that letter I gave you a pressing invitation to visit the islands, assigning as a reason that important changes are called for in the mission. That invitation I will not recall; in fact I now see additional reason for urging it; but little did I think that your mind & that of your colleagues had anticipated all my reasonings, and that the document proposing the very changes contemplated, was actually then in our harbour. That document I have read with more interest than any other that ever came from the Board. You have done the subject ample justice, & I bless God, for one for the conclusion to which he has led your mind. The changes proposed will occasion

Rev. R. Armstrong – Honolulu – Jan. 13. 1849. Recd May 25. Ackd Aug 17th. [illegible]

great inconvenience to most, if not all of the mission families; they will expose them to serious dangers, from the "world, the flesh & the devil"; but I think they are called for in the Providence of God, & what influence & wisdom I have shall be given to bring them about, in the best way possible. I have been painfully convinced, for some time, that unless the homeward tendencies of the mission, could be checked in some way, the Islands would become destitute of Christian institutions at no distant day & this fair land be again given up to the enemy. But, if the mission will come up to the high principles of your letter, & I think it will, then I see a prospect that this will be a land of Bibles, Churches, & Christian ordinances in all future time, although much faith, prayer & hard toil, will be necessary to bring it about.

A copy of the General Letter having been handed me by Bro. Clark, with permission to make official use of it privately, this day I submitted it to the cabinet of the King. I have also made the King himself acquainted with its contents; & both he & his Ministers

appeared to be much pleased, the more so since the native population is disappearing so rapidly. I apprehend no difficulty at present, in procuring lands for the brethren who wish to settle their families here, provided they are willing to come fully under the laws.

It is a great comfort to Mrs. Armstrong & myself, that the Committee has taken so enlarged & liberal view of my conduct, in accepting the office I now hold. There is no body of men on earth whose good opinion I value more than the Board, or whose censure I should dread more; & the dread of giving pain to those I so much loved, has occasioned me many an hours ~~pain~~ anxious solicitude. But we are now relieved. What my aims have ever been on miss. ground they are still; & by the grace of God I wish to die toiling for this poor people.

My situation is in many respects a trying one; peculiarly so at present; but I had counted the cost & am not disappointed. Our schools have been prostrate since October, on account of the measles; & many children, especially infants have died; but we shall start them again soon.

The course the French consul is pursuing here, gives me some apprehension

& yet I hope the government of the French Republic will find so much to do at home that they will let us alone.

A kind Providence has cast in my way, a good assistant in the person of a young gentleman from your vicinity. His name is Warren Goodale, son of Mr David Goodale of Marlboro, Mass. He is now clerk in my office, & so far affords me great satisfaction. He acquires the native language rapidly & is getting fast hold of the school. He is engaged with me for 4 years. It might be interesting to his parents to know these facts from me.

I wish to hear from you occasionally, & be assured I shall be still a co-worker with you in laboring for the good of this nation. I have only shifted my position, not changed my aim. Do write me freely & better still come & see me, & we will make the tour of the Islands together God willing.

Very kind regards to your family & your colleagues, & believe me

As ever
Yours aff^ly. Brother in the Lord,
R. Armstrong.

I have written to the father. S. A. [illegible]

Note: Such has been the course of Mr. [illegible] here, that I have felt justified in going to the government in my correspondence with him in regard to the article in the "[illegible] Sentinel"(?) [illegible] letter to you. It is not [illegible] whenever.

(Confidential) ~~97~~ 98

Honolulu, May 4. 1849.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss^y House, Boston

My dear Brother;

It was with no little solicitude that I waited to hear your views & those of the Pru. Committee, in regard to my acceptance of the office, vacated by the death of the lamented Richards; consequently my relief was great on the receipt of your letter of Oct. 14. 1848. The thought of giving pain to the Board, has often lain heavy on my heart; for there is no body of men on earth, that I so much respect & love.

You request my views of your letter to the mission of July 19, last. My view is, that it was just the thing called for. When I read it, I said to myself, "now there is hope that this land will be peopled by Christians & that gospel institutions will be perpetuated here till the end of time". On the old plan, the brethren would have one by one returned to their native land & left the Island in darkness. Now, they are filing off to take care of themselves & will about all dwell in the land & do good.

The duties of my office would not permit me to be much of the time in Genl Meeting, but it has been a very important Meeting, & its results will be long felt. The proceedings in regard to the Seminary at Lahainaluna, I think, you will approve of. If we can only be let alone, we shall hope to make it, more efficient than it ever has been. The government is as liberal as its means will admit of it if we fail to sustain the Institution, it will be from one or two causes — the want of means, or the Papists, or both of these. The French consul & priests will give us all the trouble they can, but we must commit our way unto the Lord, do our duty & go forward, even into the Red Sea. The matter is so arranged that the Institution may fall back to the Board, in case the Government cannot carry it on, according to the agreement. An additional burden of no small consequence is now thrown upon my own hands, but I shall rejoice in doing what I can to carry out so important an object. The present teachers will continue, & remain in connection with the mission, getting their supplies from the Depository &c. This will save the funds very materially. I hope to see the Boarding schools at Hilo & Wailuku, sustained before long, without aid from the Board.

Could we be let alone by these foreign officials, with the blessing of God, we could soon accomplish much that needs to be done in the way of education; but the "foreign relations" occupy a great deal of the time of the government.

Mr. Hall will be a great acquisition to the "Polynesian" office, but a serious loss to the mission. I think, on the whole you will not disapprove of his course. The proposition of the Secular Agent was a good one, in my opinion & ought to have been acceded to by the mission. I hope the Pru. Committee will look upon it with favor.

I have just completed the census of the Islands & find the whole population to be 80.641. Deaths during 1848, 7943, births during '48, 1478. In the schools there are over 18000 children & the cause of education is advancing.

We have little fear of difficulty from Ten Eyck; he is understood at Washington evidently. Tomorrow he leaves for California, to return it is said in the Ohio! our danger is now from the French.

The King, I grieve to tell you, has relapsed into his habits of intemperance, & at times is a great source of shame & sadness to our hearts. He seems of late to be almost beyond hope; the young Chiefs, Alexander Liholiho & Lot Kamehameha, have left the Royal school & are in the offices of Judge Lee & Mr. Bates; but they do not conduct well at all.

In fact, I have but little hope in their case. The young ladies, Bernice & Mary, are quite promising. The high chiefs generally are sober & orderly in their lives, perfectly so. John Young, the Primier, is a very correct & well disposed man.

Judge Lee is a treasure to us; he is a man of clear mind, honest heart, & great industry. I hope too that he is a christian. He teaches in the Sabbath School & takes bold ground in favor of temperance. Withal he appreciates the worth of the missionaries, as much as any one I know of, & is doing what he can to have them settle in the land.

Continue to write me occasionally. By the way, Dr Judd has been thoroughly overhauled but no mal-administration proved against him. He has his faults, but I think him true & honest.

Mrs Armstrong unites with me in kind regard to you & your family. Our feelings have not changed, that I perceive, at all, towards the Board & your great work.

I am as ever
Tr[u]ly yours
R. Armstrong.

Rev. Richd Armstrong
Honolulu, Aug 4, 1865
Rec. Oct 14, 1865

(Private) 99

Honolulu,
September 4. 1849.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.;
Cor. Sec. of A.B.C.F.M.

Dear Mother;

From what I wrote you in former letters you will not be wholely surprised to hear of our present difficulties with the French. As the most important fact in the case will be contained in the Polynesian of this week (& I beg your earnest attention to them) I need not state them here. What occurs to me as of great importance is to get the fact fairly before the people of France, especially to get the whole proceedings of Admiral De Tromelin & consul Dillon, into the Protestant Journals of Paris. Can you not through D. Baird, Mr. Kirk, or some one else familiar with French affairs, give such a direction to this number of the Polynesian that it cannot fail to be noticed by those Journals?

You have only to read the demands of the Admiral & Consul on the 22d. of August, & the government replies on the 25th in order to have a fair view of existing difficulties, & to be able to form a correct opinion as to the merits of the case. And you cannot fail to see, that as in the demands of Laplace & Mallet in former years, so here, the whole is based on brandy and popery.

As to the treaty of March 26. 1846, the Admiral privately admits it has not been violated by this government. But refer to the 6th article & read for yourself. By that article the Hawaiian government may levy any duty which does not amount to an absolute prohibition. It did impose a duty of $5. per gallon, & yet over 3700 gallons have been imported since January last, & this has been consumed almost entirely by 300 or 400 foreigners! In fact, we are flooded with brandy, & intemperance is increasing to a most alarming extent in this place. And yet war is made upon us for a difference of opinion about the meaning of the 6th article of the treaty, & that too after the most ample guarantee

that all excess of duties over what may be determined upon in France will be refunded.

This affair has a most important political & national bearing; as it will affect very sensibly the interests of all who come here to trade or to reside; & if the French government persist in sustaining the proceedings of De Fonselin & Dillon, the inevitable result will be, the downfall of the present dynasty. For I feel very sure, that rather than be thus buffeted & harrassed with matters that ought to be adjusted in police courts, the King will loose his sovereignty. It is not worth having at such a price. But these proceedings have another affect, a more grave & solemn one. They affect most vitally the moral & religious interests of this nation. We are now contending, at fearful odds too, against two of the greatest evils that ever afflicted the human family, both in body & soul. Concede these demands & brandy will be cheap as small beer in our Island. What follows? Intemperance with all its legions of woes. Let the "chief" of the French mission have the control of the catholic schools (to which he has no more

claim than he has to the govt. high ways or bridges) & there is an end to our 600 public schools, containing 18,000 children! They could not be carried on, if foreign Bishops are to demand the control of any part of them. So that, this new outrage I hope will arouse the churches, who have done so much for this nation, to beseech God on its behalf, that He will again appear for its deliverance. The schools under my care as a whole are now unusually prosperous, & I confess the danger they are in of being disbanded by the strong arm of French power, fills me with concern. But God is our trust. His Providence has been wonderfully kind towards this nation in past years & we must not distrust him now. The 37th Psalm has been my meat & drink of late.

But we have sinned as a nation: The churches are stupid. There is much licentiousness, indolence, & intemperance. The King relapsed into his former bad habits about a year ago & has given the hearts of his best friends great pain. Recent troubles have led him to consideration; but he needs a 'new heart'; nothing short of this will save him.

Do write me occasionally. My post is a hard one, but I would not leave it for the world, so long as I can keep up the schools.

Very affly & truly yours
R. Armstrong.

To Dr Anderson

(Private)

Sep. 1st 4, The damages done to govt property by the French are estimated at $99.840.

Consul Genl. Miller had an interview with the King to-day, in which he complimented him highly on his mode of warfare, & declared that he considered it a complete victory over the French, whose proceedings he declared, he felt assured would be disapproved of by every government in Europe.

The protests of the English & American consuls, are both very emphatic & very strong. And besides, Consul. Genl. Miller wrote a private letter to the Admiral, in a very kind spirit, endeavoring to show him that his demands were unfounded. That letter I have seen.

You may not be aware that Mr. Judd was appointed in April last, as the King's envoy to the U. States, England & France, with a view to adjust these very difficulties, & to get, if possible a new treaty entirely. It is possible that some other person may be sent to re-inforce him, but that is not yet determined.

It is the opinion of some of our wisest men here, that the result of these proceedings will be favorable to this government. It may be so; much however will depend on the ground taken by England & the U. States in regard to the matter. Their consuls here will spare no pains to arouse them on the subject. Ten Eyck has returned to this place from California, but has taken no part in these proceedings. Dillon, being about to leave for France, appointed him (Ten Eyck) as his consular agent here, but he was not accepted by the government.

The Admiral is to sail in the [illegible] for San Francisco to-morrow, & offers kindly to take despatches for the government, either for the U. States or for Europe! What a strange being a Frenchman is!

I mark these sheets "private", not because of any special importance that I attach to their contents, but because situated as I am, I do not wish my name to go before the public in any shape, as connected with these troubles. You will appreciate this reason.

Most truly & affly
Yours
R. Armstrong.

100

Private.

Honolulu, Nov. 30, 1849

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Cor. Sec. of A.B.C.F.M.
Boston

Rev. & Dear Sir;

You perceive that I mark all my letters to you "private"; not that I have anything particularly confidential to write, but I do not wish them to get into print, for reasons that will be obvious to you. In fact, I intend them for your own eye, & that of your colleagues, if you think proper. Considering the great amount of your correspondence, & what is of more serious consequence, the feebleness of your health, I hesitate whether to write you at all. But it may be of some use to you in conducting your operations here, to receive occasionally a letter from one in my position.

Allow me to turn your particular attention to the Polynesian of Nov. 10. No. 26, where you will some statistical tables in which you will feel interested. Possibly the Editor of the Herald may think proper to transfer them to his columns.

The table of the "Census" presents a frightful but alas, I fear a true picture. As it is my duty to attend to the "Census", it will be taken again in January.

From the table of schools, it appears that about one fourth of the native population attend school, & of 19.028 scholars, 9,855 can read the native language. To furnish these readers with suitable mental nutriment, it will be necessary to keep the press in motion, & I hope the mission will not for the present think of transferring the press to other hands. The government might easily do all the printing, but a little change in government officers might cripple the mission exceedingly. It must not be taken for granted that the government press will be an evangelical press, or that it will even favor missionary labours as it now does.

Another fact you will observe, is that about one sixth of the revenue of this little kingdom is devoted to education. In no way perhaps can this portion of the revenue be so profitably expended for the good of this wasting people. On comparing this table with

the reports of the last four years, the proportion of catholic children in the schools has diminished by some hundreds, although the widest latitude has been given them.

Since the departure of Dillon the French consul, we learn more clearly than before that the priests sympathised with him entirely in his hostility against this government; & moreover it appears that the burden of his instructions from Luis Phillipe's government related to the interests of Popery on the Islands. This we learn from Frenchmen themselves, who have had good opportunity to know the truth, & it accords with what Dillon said to me at our very first interview, & in fact with his whole history while here. But God has taken Luis Phillipe in hand, & I trust has put a hook in Dillon's nose, & led him back whence he came. Since the French invasion, the priests in some places have resorted to their old policy of using threats, but so far as I know, with no success. French captains who have recently touched here express great indignation at the doings of the Consul & Admiral; but after

all, I never know how much a Frenchman means, when he speaks. On the whole I fear popery less now than I did when the Bishop & priests, & Consul were all on friendly terms with the government & occasionally seen in the Palace. Dillon will doubtless do all he can to prevent Dr. Judd's reception in Europe, & I shall feel some anxiety until I hear how matters go there.

At present we are feeling a strong influence from California & we shall feel it more & more. Gold is coming over to purchase our lands, & this is increasing their value rapidly. As the white race increases we may expect changes here that will not be mere shadows; in fact, we hear whispers of annexation already from California. The decrease of the native population, and the conduct of our King are calculated to invite aggression on the part of the white race. But Zion is safe, & this is all that is safe. One thing I aim at continually, & that is to have the Islands filled up with good men. It affords me great pleasure to assist the brethren of the mission in getting land on which to settle their families

and obtain a livelihood. About 16 of them now hold more or less land in fee-simple & others talk of applying for some. This is the best basis for support they can have, & it forms at once a tie between their families & the soil.

(We are glad to welcome back to their native land, the sons & daughters of the first missionaries. A few evenings ago, I had great pleasure in introducing Samuel Ruggles to the King & chiefs. It was truly gratifying to see with what warmth they received him & inquired for his parents. He is now teaching the Charity School, mostly made up of half caste children, with a salary of $800 a year. This is a very important institution & must be sustained. Asa Thurston I trust will find some good situation & remain on the Islands.)

I am anxious to obtain some works on popular education, & I will feel greatly obliged to you, to send to me the entire Report of Horace Mann, the education

laws of Massachusetts & New York, Professor Potters Book on common schools, & any other works you think would aid me in conducting the public schools under my care. The laws refered to above, I want particularly, as guides in legislating for schools. I am sorry to trouble you with this, but I know not to whom else to write on the subject. Mr Hill will please to send the bill for these works to Mr Castle. There may be useful works on education, Reports, lectures &c, that I know nothing of, please send me such as you think of importance. Our hope here lies in training the young & for this we want help.

With Christian salutations to your colleagues, including Mr Green, for whom I feel the greatest respect, & sympathy

I remain as ever

your aff. Brother in the Lord

R. Armstrong.

P.S. I beg you not to take any extra trouble on account of the books; it may be sufficient to send a list of what you know I need to some one of the Booksellers. In your feeble health & many cares I fear I am asking too much.

Rev. R. ~~[illegible]~~ Armstrong,

Honolulu Nov. 30, 1849

Recd. July 9 1850

Ansd. Jan. 21/51.

Privt.

Books requested.

(Private.)

Honolulu
Apl. 18. 1850.

R. Anderson D.D.
Cor. Sec. A.B.C.F.M.
Boston

My dear Brother;

Your letter written in January & forwarded by the hand of Mr Allen, our new Am. consul reached me in 71 days after date! How the ends of the earth are drawing nigh together!

I do not wonder at your regret on reading my letter of August last in reference to the French. It was a moment of despondency, occasioned not merely by the French, but by a much more distressing evil existing in the very heart of the government. The Kings private conduct was such & is still, as to lead me to fear that Gods displeasure must fall upon the nation, and that the time had come for the visitation.

Mrs Chapman felt very much, I think as you did in reference to my feelings, & I thank you both for your friendly admonition. I shall ever esteem it a favor, if you will point out any thing amiss that you may perceive in my conduct or manner of life. My position is one of toil, responsibility, & owing to the cause to which I have alluded, at times of great grief and pain. At times I feel as though I must break away from so much that is disgusting & vile. But when I look at the nation, especially the young, the 16.000 children in the schools, my heart grows warm & I feel like holding on. My report for the Legislature now in session, is ready & I hope to send it to you in a few days. Our educational interests are advancing; the demand for English education increases among the natives; there are over 300 children now on the Islands, studying the English language. A year ago there was not half this number. Owing to Mr Alexanders ill health, the Seminary at Lahainaluna has been suspended for a season, in

order that Bro. A. may recruit his health. Mr. Lyman has been invited to become his associate, but he declines. Who we shall get, I cannot tell. C. B. Andrews may return, but it is obvious that Mr. Alexander would greatly prefer some other one for an associate. They did not pull together.

The changes that are going on in the mission, will try the piety of its members more than any thing that has occured since its commencement. When every one is thrown upon his own resources, the selfish feelings are apt to get the ascendency, & on questions relating to property, difficulties are likely to arise; indeed in some cases have arisen. Opportunities for getting wealth on the one hand are favorable, & on the other, the prospect of obtaining a support from native congregations is dull. In fact, the brethren who leave the Board, will be obliged either to draw a part & a large part of their support from the Board, or devote a portion of their time to some secular employment. The natives are decreasing rapidly, & consequently their means will decrease. It will not be surprising if some of us fall into the snare of the Devil, while thinking

that we are doing God service in seeking a support. But I feel a comfortable assurance that the changes now going on are dictated by God's Providence, & if so, He will not forsake his church & his ministers while subjected to these new trials & temptations. The great danger is a loss of spirituality in us all, & a relapse into worldliness. But we can do all things through Christ strengthening us; & to Him we must look.

The censure upon Mr. Dimond I regret, not that his course has been what I could have wished & I lived next door to him, but he had been severely handled by the mission & withal he is not "cut out" for a missionary & you can never make one out of him. He is however an upright, conscientious, & good man.

I hope some way will yet be devised by which the secular agents may do something for themselves. It cannot be expected that they will be contented long as they are. This I expect to send by our good friend ex consul Turrill, who will leave to-morrow. I am to breakfast with him at the King's & then he goes on board the vessel with his family. Mr. Allen has made a good impression thus far. I like him much. The new treaty is rather one sided, but it will be confirmed as soon as we hear that it has passed the senate.

Most truly Yours R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong,
Honolulu, April 1850
Rec'd July 10, 1850

Honolulu,
Oct. 24. 1850.

Rev. & dear Brother;

I beg to ask your council in a matter of great importance to us in Honolulu. The present teacher of the Royal School will leave us at the close of his next term, & I wish to procure a good teacher from N. England, as soon as possible. Can you suggest a suitable person for this important post? You are perhaps aware that the Royal School is not now confined to the children of the chiefs, but embraces also, the children of the most prominent white families of Honolulu as day scholars. This greatly increases its importance, & enlarges its sphere of usefulness.

We therefore need such a teacher as are found in your best academies; one

To Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

who, aside from his qualifications to teach the dead languages, Mathematics, & other branches of a liberal education, possesses a good natural disposition, a good address, & good health. But above all, we want a man of consistent piety.

It is extremely desirable that he be a married man. Otherwise he will not be likely to be contented for a long time. A good wife will double the usefulness of such a teacher.

I am authorized by the govern-ment to guarantee to a suitable person who will come out immedia-tely, & take charge of this school, a salary of $1500, as long as he will give satisfaction, or may be needed. The salary will commence, on his leaving the States for the Islands; & I beg the favor of Mr. Hill to advance to such a person as may be recom-mended by Rev. Chester S. Lyman

of New Haven Ct. a sum not exceeding $1500, to be charged to the Hawaiian government & paid to the Secular agents here.

Dr Judd speaks of a Mr Richards, a relative perhaps of our excellent brother Richards, who was teaching a school for the insane in Boston, & would like to come to the Islands. Are you acquainted with him & is he the man? If you think he is, please drop a line to Rev. C. S. Lyman of New Haven, recommending him. Mr Lyman, you may be aware, has spent a year at the Islands, & taught for a season, this same Royal School, under Mr Cooke, & knows perhaps better than any other man in the States, just what sort of a man we want.

Sherman Peck Esq. will also take an interest in the matter. He is now here & will carry this by way of California.

I am sorry to trouble you with even the labour of perusing this letter; for I am aware, how precious time is to you. But it relates to a matter

vitally connected with the great work you have been doing here for the latter 30 years. In fact, it is a part of the same work.

My aim is just what it has ever been since I first stepped upon these shores, viz. to secure the permanent establishment under God, of Christian institutions on the Islands. For this object I live, & in the work I hope to die.

Mrs Armstrong has not enjoyed the best of health for years, & with a view to her improvement in this respect, as well as to see her aged parents, she will probably sail for N. England this fall, by way of Cape Horne. She will doubtless visit Boston, & I will feel greatly obliged, for any advice you may render her, in regard to our oldest son, who will accompany her, if she goes.

We are expecting another French ship of war, with another French agent soon. The priests are rather annoying these days. The Lord reigneth in Him we trust & never yield to injustice. Aff. Yours, R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu, Oct. 24. 1850.
Rec'd Jan. 7. 1851.
[illegible]
Tracts received

103

(Private.)

Honolulu, Feb. 10. 1851.

To Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
"Miss'y House", Boston.

My dear Brother;

Our worthy brother S. C. Damon is about to leave us, to visit Massachusetts, & I must embrace the opportunity to write you, knowing the interest you feel in our affairs, social, political, & religious, for a knowledge of all these combined, is necessary to judge of the indications of Providence in reference to any people. Our social state is better than usual; there is more harmony & good feeling among foreigners than there used to be; less bitterness toward missionaries, & very little internal opposition to government. Our religious state is not the most encouraging; worldliness prevails; meetings are not well attended, & there are no conversions that I hear of.

But in the foreign relations of the government there is trouble again. The French Commissioner, M. Perrin, arrived here in the Sirinde, corvette in December, & he & Mr. Wyllie have been deeply engaged in negotiations ever since with a view an adjustment of the difficulties, but that result, I regret to say, has not been arrived at

as yet, & in fact, I see no prospect of an adjustment. The French Commissioner seems disposed to persist in the demands made in the ultimatum of Dillon & Petron-bure; in other words to thrust upon us at the cannons mouth, both brandy & popery, two of the greatest evils that ever afflicted any people. It seems useless to argue the case with him. I have had a long discussion with him in private, & came to the conclusion that nothing will satisfy him, but for the government to ~~take~~ off the $5 duty on rum, put the govt. schools that are catholic, tho. supported by govt., under the care of the catholic inspector, ~~bishop~~, receive all sorts of despatches in the French language, & in fact, govern the Islands in their way. I assured him that any farther interference with our schools, would have only one result & that will be, the entire overthrow of our whole school system, the government will withdraw all aid from them & throw them upon voluntary support. Such a result he would not like, for it would give no glory to France, & no advantage to the catholics here, who are of the poorest & lowest class of the people, & are neither able, nor willing, to support schools for themselves voluntarily. He grows more imperative in his tone, & I have many fears that the end will be another outrage. The same animus that actuated the French to sustain & restore the Pope in

Rome, seems to me to actuate them here. But we are in God's hands, & need not fear what man can do unto us, if we are right.
It is strange that we hear not a word from the mediation of the U. States & England, since Dr. Judd returned. M. Perrin affirms that up to the fifteenth of Nov. '50, his govt. knew nothing of it. It may be a part of God's design now to bring to an end this young & weak native govt., & hoist a flag here that France will respect. Better to do so, than to be forever in peril from abroad, & struggling to keep above water.
Personally I shall loose nothing if our school system is abandoned. Owing to the weakness of the government, the disorganizing influence of the papists, & the ignorance of the people, teachers, & inspectors, it is a work of great labor to conduct them. But it will be a great national calamity; out of the 15.000 children now in the schools, I do not believe there will be 5.000 tought on the voluntary principle. The case will be worse than before the government undertook to sustain the schools; for in those days chiefs by their influence could induce the people to do what they pleased. Now they cannot: we are under a constitution & laws.
The government has set apart a large amount of land, for educational purposes, & lately an appropriation of $5000 was made, for the erection of a new school

house in the rear of Honolulu, for the Royal School, & also for the youth of the town. All this shows a liberality on the part of the government, & could we be let alone, I think, education here in time would be like what you see in N. England. We want Punahou to be turned into a College, & our Royal School into a good academy as a feeder. On all these points Mr Damon will talk with you, & give you my views in full. He may also confer with you, in reference to the teacher for whom I wrote some months since.

Mrs Armstrong will, I trust, have the pleasure of attending the Annual Meeting of the Board, & that would be to me one of the choicest privileges in the world.

Mr Severence is here, & we like him much. He is a plain, clear headed old republican & I think, will not get up such a mess as did Brown & Ten Eyck. Mr Allen your consul is also a first rate man. In fact, they are both well adapted to the post they occupy.

With the same Christian regard I have ever cherished towards yourself & your associates, I am your aff.

Brother in the Lord.

R. Armstrong

Feb. 25. Nothing more favorable in regard to the French. I fully expect another outrage. Perrin seems reckless of truth & consistency, & seems to lean only on power. But God rules, & in him is our trust.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu, Febr. 18, 1857.
[illegible]
[illegible]

(Private.)

Honolulu,
March 31. 1851.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss.y House, Boston.

My dear Mother;

It afforded me much pleasure to receive this morning, your letter of Jan. 21. & as the U. S. Vandalia, Cap. Gardner sails to-day, direct to Panama, to carry Despatches for Washington, I write a line in reply.

I send the Polynesian of Saturday, in which you will see how far we have got along with the French. The adjustment is only partial as you will see, & if it suit French humor, the whole matter may be reopened again in a few months. Some of M. Perrin's ~~last~~ Despatches are so absurd, so tyrannical, & out of all reason, that an appeal has been made to the U. States govt. that I hope will lead to a good result.

The truth is, nothing but the presence of the U. S. ship of war; the decided ground of Mr Severence, & of the Americans ashore here, have saved us from another invasion. The French Commissioner could not but see, that if he pushed the govt to an extremity, the U. S. flag would go up & would be defended to the last. And now I apprehend, if the U. States assumes a decided tone, France will ease off; otherwise, she will persecute us to the death; for it is most apparent, that the living spring of all her aggressions on this country has been popery. Extract this poison & peace would result at once.

What Mr Webster will do, I do not know. Some say he will do nothing. If so, our case will be a sad one, & American interests here will suffer as well as Hawaiian. We shall continue to be the victims of popish malice, & French violence. But I trust, & shall hope that the U. S. govt will take the matter up warmly & see to her interests & ours too, for they are the same. Mr Severence is just the man for the times here; cool, able, & decided. His feelings too are deeply enlisted in our cause. I do not know that he & I differ at all, in our views of existing political events, & he is doing all he can to arouse Mr Webster.

Perhaps you can drop a word that will do good. We do not want annexation, nor a protectorate, but from the King down, we should prefer either or both at once, to French violence, popery & rum.

I shall take a deep interest in your General Letter, which I have not yet seen. In fact, all your plans in reference to the Islands are of great interest to me. Our aim is one & the same, to establish Christian Institutions for future ages on these Islands, & God grant us wisdom, grace, & strength for the task. It is a heavy up hill work, in this depraved world.

The sooner our teacher gets along the better; as the Royal School is now without any teacher at all, & one is much needed. We must push education with our might out here, or we shall have a sad state of society by & by. The Sydney people are coming in upon us in considerable numbers, & they are very low in point of intelligence, & habits.

The brethren are getting land in considerable quantities, but it is unproductive, & much of it is poor, only fit for pasture. Expenses of living are very high here now & the brethren must have some considerable resource, for support, or suffer. The families at Honolulu have too little support, if it could

be avoided.

I thank you for the welcome you offer to my dear wife, should she visit Boston. Do you not think of visiting the Islands by & by? How glad I should be to welcome you on these distant shores, & Mrs Anderson also.

Warren Chamberlain appears well. How like his father in some of his traits of character! He is now writing for Mr. Wyllie, & he writes well.

Asa Thurston is in the office of the Interior, & is an efficient Clerk; but his health is not good.

Kind regards to your associates & your family.

Truly & affy. yours

R. Armstrong

Rev. Richard Armstrong.
(Private)
Honolulu, March 31, 1857.
Rec. June 23/57.
Ans. July 11.

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong
~~Anderson,~~ Richard

105. A.L. to R. Anderson; 21 July 1851
106. A.L. to R. Anderson; 20 Oct. 1851
107. A.L. to R. Anderson; 7 Sept. 1851
108. A.L. to R. Anderson; 5 Nov. 1851
109. A.L. to R. Anderson; 30 Jan. 1852
110. A.L. to R. Anderson; 25 Feb. 1852

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Blandford July 21st 1851.

Rev. R. Anderson.

Much respected Friend.

Having been disappointed in my intended visit to Boston, you will I trust, pardon the liberty I take in writing. My plans are entirely guided by circumstances, consequently often changed.

The responsibility & solicitude, in obtaining a suitable place for our son, has drawn hard on my strength. Schools & boarding places, are much more easily found, than suitable guardians. Places free from any great temptations, where there is good religious & moral influence, are more rare, I think, in N England now, than in former years.

I trust, that Providence has now provided a good place for Wm N. in Hinsdale, where I hope soon to go. He has been in Westfield, this summer, & tho not a very moral place, his conduct both in & out of school, has the entire approbation of his teacher, which is most gratifying to his mother.

I have made no inquiries of yourself respecting a place for him, not because I thought you would feel no interest in our children, but because you are pressed with many cares. I shall probably find it necessary to make some arran-

-gements with some one of you with regard to funds for him, until my husband can arrange it. Mr. A.'s last letter, was dated May 2d— He says I can draw on Mr. Hill for any funds I may need while here, having arranged with Mr. Castle to that effect. He also said that Mr. Castle was to leave in July for U.S.A. Perhaps I can return with him. Shall call for nothing at present, & probably not until I go to Boston. I wish if possible to return by Steam— Should the rail-road be completed, & the fare reduced, would wait until Dec. Our daughter will I presume go with me. Should be glad to know of any good opportunities, by way of the Cape, & at what time. Mr. A. desires me to make some purchases in Boston, & I may find it necessary to ask some assistance from some one of you, as I am a stranger & lame.

My present intention is, to attend the Meeting of the Board in Portland. Should be glad to fall under the shadow of the wings, of some one of our friends in Boston, as I am quite alone. Shall visit my husbands friends in Penn, either before or after that meeting— Probably before. Caroline will be with me. Should I go direct from Penn. to Boston, at what date should I be there, to go in company with any of you? And where should I find you? How could I find a place to stop

in Portland, & where? Should I go to Portland without going to Boston, the same question follows; with regard to a place in Portland.

Pardon these questions — am sorry to trouble you with them, & will not be likely to repeat them, for some 20 years at least.

Shall hope to visit Boston, & its vicinity, after said meeting, unless circumstances should delay my visit South — If so, should go to B. before that time. Should I find it necessary at any time to stop in Boston several days, could I obtain board at a reasonable rate in some quiet private family near our Missionary Fathers. I can now walk ½ mile with aid from a cane, tho my lame limb is a little shorter than the other, & probably always will be so. The Surgeon, says the neck of the bone was broken. This to me, in the peculiar circumstances, is a mysterious affliction. A kind Father has done it, & I am satisfied. I needed the affliction, or it would not have been sent upon me. My health has improved rapidly, & I am quite sanguine in the hope of returning, to labor yet more, in the cause which has long been dear to my heart.

I have a great desire to see you all, & talk with you. I wish to see Mr. David Green & family. Wish to visit the Missionary Rooms, & wish to see, hear & learn as much as possible.

I rejoice to learn that D. Webster takes so much interest in our Island affairs. Hope we shall be relieved from French oppression.

Have you obtained a Clergyman for Honolulu? Mr. Davis of Westfield shewed me your letter to him respecting one. He need be "wise as a serpent & harmless as a dove." With our Honolulu Teach I am quite well acquainted. Think him an excellent man, & calculated to suit our place. Expect to see him this week at his fathers in Gt. Barrington where I expect to go on the 25th & remain a short time. On the 29th hope to go to Holyoke Seminary & remain until the 7th. Shall hope to see some of our Boston friends there.

My best respects to your family.

Yours aff—

C. C. Armstrong

Mrs. C. C. Armstrong,
Westfield, Aug 21, 1851
Recd Aug 22/51
Ansd Aug 25/51

PS My husband writes, that the King continues to do badly. Can tell more when I see you. Three letters from Mr. Wyllie. He is a firm friend to the Nation & mission, but would like us all better, if we would take a glass of wine with him.

Mc. Ewensville Penn. Sept 2^d 1851

Rev. Mr. Anderson

Dear Sir.

The time has nearly arrived for us to leave for N. England. We expect to reach Princeton on the 6th spend the Sabbath at Dr. Alexanders, & on Monday go to N. York. & take the Boat for Portland. My object in writing is, to secure a place for Caroline, as she will probably go with me to Portland. I am to go to Mr. E. C. Norton's 77 State St. Portland. If C. could go there with me, should be very glad.

My plans for visiting are somewhat frustrated. I had intended doing all my visiting & then spend the remainder of my time, with my dear Mother. Have been with her some, but had much more to say. While enjoying the kindness & hospitality of a large circle of relatives & friends here, the Telegraph announces my Mother's death. Why these multiplied afflictions, in the peculiar circumstances, is to me quite mysterious. My Father's death, a broken limb, My Mother's death while I am in the country, & could not even get to her, & hear her last words! These things I cannot now understand, but a kind Father sees that I need chastisment, or He would not send it. I have only to yield cheerful submission to His will. My parents died in christian hope, & I love to think

that ere long, they will welcome me to a better home, than the one I so much need while in this land of strangers.

We have a charming visit in this beautiful country. The scenery on the banks of the Susquehanna & Juniata is very beautiful. It is less romantic & wild here, than in N. England, & nothing but N. England enterprise is wanting, to make it a splendid country.

On our way here, had a pleasant visit in Philadelphia & in Princeton. Dr. & Mrs. Alexander treated us, with all the kindness & affection of parents. We stood by the graves of those great & good men, who lie side by side in the grave-yard. One feels like standing on holy ground, while reading the inscriptions on their monuments. But what a sudden transition of feeling, on turning from the grave of President Burr, to that of the son, & traitor Aaron Burr. Pollock's description of the second death came vividly to my mind.

But I forget that I am writing to a business man, & should be brief. Pardon me—

We expect to go on in company with some from N. York, & not stop in Boston, longer than is necessary. Rev. H. Cheever has kindly given me directions, how to go, as he is not going himself—Says, Mr. Merwin will go—

Kind regards, to your household

From a Missionary daughter. C. C. Armstrong.

Mrs. C. C. Armstrong

McEwensville, Penn. Sep. 2d/51

Recd. Sep. 5, 1851.

H. H. wrote Oct. 1.

Rev. Rufus Anderson
Secretary of A.B.C.F.M.
Missionary House
33. Pemberton Square
Boston.

PAID 3

McEWENSVILLE Pa.
Paid
SEP 2

(Private) 107

Honolulu, Sep. 7. 1851.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Boston.

My dear Brother;

Your favor of July 11, came to hand, & as it contains some matters of importance, I seize the first leisure moment to reply to it.

Unless Mr. Davis of whom you speak as a baptist preacher sent out for Honolulu, ~~unless he~~ is a very acceptable preacher indeed, he will not succeed here. There are not half a dozen Baptists among us & from the few we have, he could receive but little support. Dr. Lathrop, his brother in law, will not be able to afford him much assistance; he is not well liked by many.

As to sending out a man for the place, I would say, don't be in haste about it. Mr. Taylor is labouring with great acceptance to our church going people, (& they are but a small part of the residents) & there is considerable talk of settling him as their minister. He is a judicious, industrious, humble man, & a good faithful preacher; & if the Lord gives him the hearts of the people here, why not let them have him, & let another man or half a man, if you have any such,

Sep. 10. After writing this, the matter seemed to me of so much importance, that I showed your letter "No." private to Bro. Clark & asked him to give you his view of it also. We feel alike I think, in regard to it.

be sent to Lahaina! The fact is Lahaina is not much of a field. The residents are few, & when there are no whaling ships in port, the congregation does not average 25, I think, & these are mostly traders or transient persons. During 7 or 8 months in the year, the seamans preacher there has very little to do, & I think Mr Taylor will be quite willing to settle in Honolulu, should he have a call. The general opinion, however seems to be, that it will not be best to move in the matter until Mr Damons return, lest some ill feeling should spring up.

I do not intend to be prominent in this movement, for several reasons. I came here for the good of the natives, & to them I intend to cleave, though my family go to the seamens chapel. Bro. Clark is too feeble for the 1st church, & I feel bound to aid him all I can in preaching. Again, the more entirely the man is thrown upon the residents for support the better; we missionaries must be circumspect & not be too prominent in the matter, or it will not succeed. Still, I shall by the grace of God, try to do my part in bringing about the settlement of some faithful minister among the residents & for them. Mr Damon is a good man, but not so well liked as I wish he was. He lacks point & power as a preacher, & his manner in private is abrupt; so that the good he would do is not appreciated. But should the good man you speak of drop down among we shall

give him a hearty welcome & try to find something for him to do.

Things are about right at Washington. Protection & not annexation is just what we want. If they will only do as they say, we are safe. I fear they will confide too much in French promises, & profess-ions.

Our teacher we greatly need. Our new school house is nearly complete; it is in a cool, retired place, will cost about $7000, & will accommodate 80 scho-lars. From what I hear of Mr. Beckwith I think we shall like him. I wish he were here.

I thank you most sincerely, for your kind attentions to my dear wife. We were greatly distressed at the news of her accident; but we have cause for gratitude in view of her recovery. The children are all quite well, & we get along as well as could be expected. The mother however is needed.

I have just returned from a tour of all the wind-ward Islands, which occupied ten weeks. My object was to visit, & examine the schools personally, lecture to parents, & promote the general interests of education, in every way I could. It was a labori-ous, & yet an interesting tour. The schools on the whole are as prosperous as could be expected. They are doing great good. There are in them not far from 10.000 children who daily read portions of Scripture in school, & most of them read well. This itself is a great gain. But we need some

I found on my tour the brethren at their posts, laboring hard, & some of them with great encouragement; but, let me say, cease not to exhort them to flee covetousness; we are all in danger of too much entanglement with this world, & need to have you exhort us.

more good school books greatly; especially do we need the Atlas, I sent by Mr. Castle. Should the engraver not be able to make out some of the names, perhaps Mr. Bingham, will assist him; or some other returned missionary. We do need the Atlas very much.

What surprised me most on my tour, was to find many of the Roman catholic schools using the New Testament (native) & this in defiance of the priests. The fact is where mind is waked up, it is not so easy to fetter it.

The Seminary at Lahainaluna now contains 80 scholars, has two strong men as teachers, & is in full blast once more. Its prospects are now fair & if we are let alone, I hope we shall sustain it efficiently. It is of great importance to the native race. Unless a goodly portion of natives are well educated, they will soon have no part in their own government. Mr. Lyons' school at Hilo I was much pleased with. It is a first rate school; & the smiling little farm attached to it, is a credit to teacher & pupil.

When the volumes sent by the State of Mass. arrive they will be duly acknowledged. I shall be very glad to receive them. What we want is to keep up with the age.

Please drop a word of counsel to my boy Mr. Nevins, if you ever meet him. My first wish is that he be a Christian; my second that he be a missionary, if the Lord will. There is no calling above this. I would choose it again before any other, hard as it is on the flesh.

With kind regards to your associates & family,

I am as ever, your aff. Brother

R. Armstrong.

P.S. We have hard times here. Money scarce & brings 4 & 6 per cent. a month! Two of our sugar planters have failed, & several merchants. The prices of every thing is low.

Honolulu, Nov. 5. 1851.

Rev. & dear Brother;

On the receipt of your letter of July 11, relating to a preacher for the residents of Honolulu, I wrote you in substance not to hasten the matter just now, as there was considerable talk of settling Mr. Taylor here for that purpose. A few days since a subscription paper was started by Reynal Gulick to raise a support for Mr. T. He & several other friends of Mr. Taylor came into my office to consult me on the subject. After a little consideration, I told them in confidence just what I had heard from you, & that a preacher might be now on his way out. So far from being displeased at this, all seemed to be glad of it, as in case he proved to be a suitable man for the place, as he probably would be, it would not then be necessary to take Mr. Taylor from Lahaina, & one more laborer would be placed in the vineyard. You will excuse I know, for mentioning your idea, as it seemed necessary before decided action was taken in reference to Mr. Taylor. If you have selected a good man, & we all feel that you will select a good one, if any, & he is on his way, very

well. He will be welcomed here, by our sort of folks, and a fair trial given him. If he succeeds, he will get a support; if not, he can return, go to Oregon, California, or turn to the natives. I write thus now, because it was the opinion of Dr. Judd, Mr. Hall, Mr. Andrews, Bates, Gulick & all who were present that I should do so.

But this is a hard place to labor. There is a great variety of character among the residents, & a great variety of creeds; but few feel settled here, & therefore they do not feel like laboring for future generations, as they otherwise would. But the Spirit of God will unite us all if poured out upon us, & here is our hope.

Mr. Beckwith, the teacher of our Royal School arrived, Oct. 14, with the Panama fever on him. But he is convalescent & I hope will be at work soon. A fine new School house is ready for him, & I think he will have a good School. He appears to be a fine pious young man.

The books sent by your Commonwealth have arrived, & I expect to derive great benefit from them. They are very valuable. I have acknowledged their receipt, & sent in return a copy of our laws.

We are just now threatened with an invasion by 160 armed desperadoes from

California, who are said to have sailed from S. Francisco Oct. 15, for the Islands, to take possession & set up a republic. But the Vandalia is on hand to receive them, & I fear no evil from them just now. How wonderful is Gods care over this infant nation! Dangers often threaten, but succor is always nigh. Yet at times, I do feel that God must be angry with us as a people. There is so much that his pure eye cannot look upon, but with displeasure, so much adultery, & drunkenness, & other degrading & hateful sins, that I sometimes wonder that we are not given into the hands of our enemies until our iniquities are purged away. Doubtless the prayers of Gods people do much to keep us up, & carry us along.

I am anxious to hear by what route Mrs Armstrong will return to the Islands. I hope not by Panama.

Very truly Yours
R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong,

Honolulu, Nov. 5, 1851.

Recd. Jan. 2, 1852.

ans. Jan. 7/52

Nicaragua invasion,

Panama Route!

(Confidential.)

Honolulu, Jan. 30. 1852.

R. Anderson D. D.

Dear Brother:

Your letter of Nov. 10th I have had the pleasure to receive. Would that I could do justice to the many important topics therein suggested, & aid you in any degree, in carrying out your great plans of missions in the Pacific. As God gives me grace, I shall continue until death, to labour with you for the same great end, the establishment of permanent Christian institutions in this far West.

But I must refer to a few topics alluded to in your letter, & then notice your several recent letters to the Mission, for a perusal of which I thank both you & them.

I hardly know how to express my gratitude to you, Mr Hill, & Mr Treat, for your kindness to my dear wife, during her visit in Boston. That visit afforded her great pleasure & I trust, profit also. Such kindness revives

the spirit long depressed with care & ill health, & prepares one for new trials & conflicts. In fact judging from her report, there is no want of warm hearts in N. England. It was a great convenience to me, to be able to procure funds for her, to meet her expenses, there in Boston, without remitting them from the Islands.

I do not wonder at your surprise & alarm on hearing of my colleague Wyllie's temperance(?) principles. Since that time, you have no doubt noticed still farther developements of the same kind. Mr Wyllie's course in this respect is greatly to be regretted, for he has labored hard & long for the independence of the Hawaiian nation, & has been of great use among us. But Mr W. is yet a man of the world, & such men cannot & will not sympathise with our views, in many respects. While they profess a high regard for religion, it must not encroach too much upon their pleasures, or the enmity of the heart will show itself, & the conflict will begin. Mr

W. is a Scotchman, who has spent much time in Mexico & South America, & has never seen much of the operation of temperance movements; & when a Scotsman takes his ground he is not easily driven from it, whether right or wrong.

Dancing has been introduced a few times at levees in the Palace, through Mr. Wyllie's influence, much to the regret of many present, & none more than myself. But, not being aware beforehand of any intention to introduce such an amusement, neither I nor any who felt as I do, had any opportunity to remonstrate. But I have hopes that the practice will not be continued in future. You must be aware of the manner of life of the King, & how little we can rely upon him for supporting the cause of religion or temperance. His example is most disasterous, I think, on the young especially. But our trust is not in princes.

The effort that is now being made to render ministers of the gospel ineligable to the House

of Representatives, I regard, as only another branch of the same old bitter vine, that has been scattering its poison among us from the beginning. I hardly think that article in our new Constitution will pass. I shall oppose it stoutly.

— Now I will turn to your recent letters to the mission. I have not had time to read them with that care & study that as worth, owing to the care of a large family, & the duties of my office; but I think, I have got hold of the main points. The purpose, aim, sentiment of the letters is decidedly good; it is more, it is noble, grand. But in working out your plan there may be some disappointments, owing to a want still, of a clear understanding of the state of things at the Islands. In the home missionary part, for instance, you may expect too much from the native churches on the Islands, from comparing them with feeble churches in the West. Those churches are growing & rising both in numbers & property; & I may add in piety. These do not & will not increase much more in numbers, or property, though they may & I hope will in piety. Natives are sluggish, unstable, indolent & uneconomical,

& it requires a vast deal of wisely directed effort to get a regular support from them, for their minister. Still I am aware that you propose to make up any lack, there may be on their part, & I fear, (I regret to say it) there will be great lack in some of the churches. The decrease of population which is constant & rapid, will affect the churches very much, & very unfavorably in respect to supporting their pastors.

Again, I do not quite understand how you or rather the Pru. Committee, came to reduce the salaries of the missionaries 10 per cent. They amounted to a bare support before; in most cases, I think, they were hardly sufficient for a support, particularly in Honolulu; & now they are charged 10 per cent. advance on their goods in the Depository. I really do not see how they can pay it, & live comfortably; for I have had over 3 years experience, of supporting a family in Honolulu, out of the mission. On inquiry of Mr. Castle the other day I found, that nearly all the brethren are

in debt, & some of them deeply; & they have been so, from year to year. Why? Because their supplies they must have, & when ordered they are sent to them, & their salary will not pay the bills.

But the object of the 10 per ct. advance is to induce the brethren to purchase of the merchants, & thus render the Depository unnecessary & bring it to a close. This, I think, is your idea. It is very well, provided their salary is such as to enable them to pay it, which as a general thing, it is not now. The thought may arise here, do not the families live more freely than they need to? No one perhaps has been more about among them during the last 4 years than I. My official duty requires me to take tours to see to the schools, & I usually lodge with them; & while the families are generally very comfortable, they live in a style as plain & economical as you could wish them to; & withal they are in debt, & some of them say, they can't keep out of debt & live decently. Now how can they pay the 10 per ct.?

Again, should ~~the~~ Depository be brought to a close, as you contemplate, it appears to me, the salaries of the brethren will need to be increased considerably. If "Castle & Cooke" continue as merchants on the plan you propose, I doubt whether they can afford to attend to the orders of the missionaries from all parts of the Islands, packing, carting, shipping, paying freight bills &c, for 10 per cent. advance on cost and charges. No other merchants would do it, even if duties were remitted. At least that is my impression. But suppose, considering the depressed state of business at the Islands, "Castle & Cooke", conclude to go into other business, as I think, a very probable event, should the Depository be closed up, then the brethren, like the rest of us, must look to the merchants to do their business, & the result must greatly increase their expense of living. Had they an agent here in Honolulu, to watch the market for them, & take advantage of favorable times, they would get some things very cheap, but on the whole, their supplies

would cost them considerably more than they now do, & would not be so good. This would lead them either to ask for more sala-ry, or to go into some secular employments in order to make out a support; for a support they must have, though I think, all of them will be satisfied with an economical one. It seems to me therefore, that the Depository ought not to be given up, until you see your way clear, to have the mission families supplied on a plan as economical as this, lest a necessity arise for increasing the salaries, or the brethren be driven into secular pursuits, in order to make out a support. (If they are to keep to their work of preaching & teaching, an entire support is necessary, & I ought to have added before a remark I made to Mr. Castle the other day, viz. that the support of the mission families is not now as ample as it was when I first came unto the ground. This I really believe is true,) & the fact leads me to think, the whole sala-ry system here needs revising. Your sugges-tion to refer this part of the work to the

"Auxiliary Missionary Society" strikes me favorably, although it would be much better, had we here a large Christian community out of the mission, from which to select its officers, at least a large proportion of them; as in that case you would have a disinterested body of men, to nominate the salaries of your missionaries here, & determine the "lack of service" on the part of the churches to be made up by the Board. This would be a great advantage; for situated as you are, you can not understand the state of affairs there, as you would, were you on the ground.

I can readily sympathise with you, in the solicitude you have felt, for the mission, under the changes that are passing over it. I have felt great anxiety ~~myself~~ for them & for myself too, more than for any one else. Some few things I could mention, could I see you, that are much to be deplored, as resulting from the changes alluded to, especially on Molokai & at Wailuku

but after having visited most of the stations during the past year, having every advantage for observing how the brethren were employed, & what manner of spirit they were of (for they still treat me just as when I was one of them) I cannot but bless God for his grace, that has kept them in the main, at their posts & at their work of seeking the salvation of the soul, first & above all things. Some have devoted & are still devoting a portion of their time to secular matters, such as surveying land, selling land for government, acting as treasurers of school money, aiding in the construction of roads &c, but in every case that has come under my observation, the object was to help their people, in ways wherein they could not get help from any other quarter. A child does not more naturally look to his parents, than the natives to their missionary, for direction & assistance in obtaining their rights to their lands, fishing privileges, freedom from oppression &c. Without such aid many of them would

never obtain their rights. I think too, some attention to these secular matters, after the example of Neff & Oberlin, has a good effect upon the health & spirits of the missionary; & if he is prudent, it increases his influence among his people. If he is to live here, & keep his family here, he can hardly avoid taking hold of such things, in order to bring up the community around him to some degree of civilization & comfort. While there is no one else to do it, he takes his compass & surveys the lands of his people, helps them to obtain their title to the same, superintends the construction of roads, bridges & school houses, for most or all of which services he receives more or less compensation. To this I can see no objection; on the contrary, it is praiseworthy, so long as the missionary keeps his one grand object in view — the promotion of the temporal & eternal good of his people. Were there abundance of competent men to be employed, & the natives able to pay them, for such services, the case would be different; but in some parts of the Islands, unless the

missionary will consent to be employed in this way, the work cannot be done, & his people must suffer.

It is true the enemy keeps up a continual clamor about missionaries leaving their proper work. But the clamor is raised by those who do not give a dollar to support the missionary cause, & are animated, not so much by a benevolent interest in its welfare, as by a dislike to those restraints upon vice, which are the result of missionary labor. Nothing will silence this noise, but an abandonment of the fight, & giving up the field to the enemy, & even then we should be looked upon with contempt. On the whole therefore, thus far, I do not think the cause has suffered materially, by the secular labors of the brethren. All the dangers you specify, as arising from an attempt to obtain an entire support here at the Islands, are real, & should be very carefully considered. I am glad you have been so explicit on that subject: at the same time, unless a full support is made up from some quarter, the tendency will be to make it out by some secular employments.

The reason, it appears to me why none

of the brethren have come into your Home-mission-ary plan, is an impression almost univer-sal among them, that the design of the Board is to have them get an entire support here as soon as possible, & in order to this they must look to their people & their own efforts, & may as well do it first as last. If their families are to be planted here also, they wish to make some provision for their support, when they can no longer look to the Board. This is very natural & proper, & hence the purchase of lands, most of which can only be of use prospec-tively.

As to glebe lands they ought not to be thought of, & I shall, if spared, propose that the law providing for such grants be annulled. Lands can be purched in fee simple at very low, in fact, merely nominal prices, & this is the best way for churches to do, which can make use of lands for the support of their pastors. Glebes are unimproved & could not without more or less outlay of labor & capital be available for support.

The "Collegiate Institution" at Omahow

is a thing of great importance; but all we can do now is to prepare the way for a College. We have not yet the material; the students requisite to justify the proper organization of such an institution; but we are in fair way to have them soon; & it is important that we be ready for them, & prevent the necessity of their being sent to the U. States to complete their course of study.

As to the security of funds invested in the Institution, I do not see how they could be made more secure under our weak government. The School has had a charter for some time, which I supposed had been sent to you. If it needs modification, tell us wherein, & it can easily be done. Mr. Cattle, I hope, will send you a copy of it.

A circumstance which shows the necessity of forwarding the design of the College, is the fact, that we have some good English schools here, & a number of young men who are designing to fit for College. The

The "Royal School" is very flourishing, has over 40 scholars, & Mr. Beckwith is very popular thus far. This school will be a feeder for the higher institution if can have one. There are two other very good good schools in Honolulu, taught by excellent men.

The government here, I think, could be induced to do something toward endowing Punahou, were it thought expedient to make application. But I have my doubts about it. Where governments give money, they expect control, & that might not be just such as we would like. It might become a very inconvenient element in the institution. But were the College in operation, the objection would be less to making such an application, & any grant could be received only on conditions well guarded.

I do not think the law exempting missionary goods from duty will be altered at present. But we are liable to changes, & we must be prepared for them. You have heard of the attempt in California to bring about an overthrow of our government; it was redi

culous enough to be sure, & has totally failed. But many, I think, most of our respectable foreign residents, men of good character, and wealth, & friendly to the government withal, are beginning to advocate annexation either as a State or territory, on the ground that then our Island produce can go into California & Oregon, duty free, & prosperity will be the consequence. This, I think, is Mr Allen's views, & he is on the very best of terms with the government, & would oppose any measure that it disapproves of. The probability to my mind is, that this will take place sooner or later; & when I see Providence pointing that way, I feel no anxiety. The natives however would fare badly, & I fear foreigners too, under purely republican institutions at present. If the people rule, they should be both wise & virtuous.

I am daily expecting the return of Mrs Armstrong & our long absent daughter.

You may be pleased to know that Mr Marsh the young gentleman you introduced by letter to Mr Castle & others is now in my office as clerk, & promises well. These growing, enterprising, virtuous, pious young yankees are just what we want to make things go. Let them come; let your own dear boy come in due time, & I will do what I can for him.

I have written you this letter in the

midst of company in my office, most of the time, & am aware of its want of proper arrange-ment & clearness. But it is the little I can do in the circumstances, & will go for an expression of my good will at least. I am glad you think it worth your while to write me, which I often wonder how you find time to do; it helps to keep my mind & heart to the great work, which I pray God I may never forget.

The two pastors, Messrs Clark & Smith, are feeble men, hardly adequate to the labors of their posts, & this has lately given me more preaching to do on the Sabbath, than I am well able to endure. But I love to preach, & when the Master call, I shall joyfully step back to the pulpit, & there stand while He shall honor me with a place in his earthly vineyard.

Be kind enough to express my gratitude to Messrs, Hill, & Treat & their families, & accept the same for yourself & family, for the reason, I have stated, and

Believe me, as ever,
Your brother in the Lord,

R. Armstrong.

P.S. Another opposition paper, the "Weekly Argus" has been started here, of the same character essentially, as the old "Gazette", Mirror, "News" & "Time", but I think rather more reckless of truth than either of them. Let none of our friends "at home", give the least credit to its statements, unless accompanied with the most satisfactory proofs. What is said in the 1st & 2d No. in regard to the interference of the pastors (Protestants) in Honolulu in the late election is untrue. I have satisfied myself of this most fully. A paper so reckless will not do us essential injury.

R. A.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu Jany. 30th 1852.
Recd. Apl. 1, 1852
Ans. Apl. 15, 1852
Private

Honolulu,
Feb. 25. 1852.

To Revd. R. Anderson D. D.

Dear Mother;
From your letters to me, from time to time, I perceive, you feel an increasing interest in the settlement of a good minister in Honolulu, to labor among the foreign residents. The importance of this measure you have not over-estimated, & I think you will be gratified to learn that we have now a fair prospect, of securing the services of Mr. Taylor, who has been preaching in the Seamens Chapel for a year past, with much acceptance to a large proportion of our residents, while Mr. Damon was absent in the States. The sum of $1500. has been subscribed for his support, for one year, from the first of April next, & something more to meet incidental expenses. Mr. T. is now absent on a short excursion for his health, but he has signified his willingness to accept the proposition, said

ask a dismission from the Seamen's F. Society.

I have written the Society my view of the case, that he should have an honorable & speedy dismission; & it has occurred to me, that it would be well for you on the receipt of this to drop a note to the Society to the same effect.

Mr. Taylor wrote the Society provisionally on the subject, some months ago; & the Secretary replies that they could not then take action on the case; but, that those here who see their way clear to call away Mr. T. from his work among seamen at Lahaina, should bear the expense of bringing out another man for that place. This may be fair enough, but I hope it will create no difficulty in the way of Mr. T's dismissal. For, in the first place, I doubt the expediency of sending a man at present to labor for seamen at Lahaina; & in the second place, we here who support Mr. T. are few, have generally large families, & are none of us wealthy; & withal we have no Meeting house. We shall have enough to do for some years to support our Minister, & get a Meeting house.

I have however every confidence in the officers of the Seamens friends Society, that they will view this matter in its proper light, & do what is right, especially with the aid of your council & influence in the matter. It does seem to me, (& Mr Damon agrees with me fully) that the time has come to have a preacher & a congregation among the residents of Honolulu, apart from the Seamens chapel. As to Lahaina, it will suffer of course, from the loss of Mr Taylor, but I think, an arrangement can be made with some brother of the mission, to devote part of his time to the residents & seamen there.

Mrs Armstrong & our daughter arrived safely on the 11th inst. & enjoy home once more. We have great cause for gratitude to God for his goodness to them on the way.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu, Feb. 25. 1852

Recd. May 4/52

Ackd. May 14/53

Mota-Ma-Hamlin May 5/52

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong

~~Anderson~~, Richard

111. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 May 1852
112. A.L. to R. Anderson; 8 June 1852
113. A.L. to R. Anderson; 15 June 1852
114. A.L. to R. Anderson; 20 Nov. 1852
115. A.L. to R. Anderson; 12 Feb. 1853

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Honolulu,
May 10. 1852.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

My dear Mother;

I have been very delinquent in not replying sooner to your letter of Jan. 7th ~~sooner~~, in regard to the Atlas; but it has not been from carelessness, but from not knowing what to write. As to the choice between the Lithographing & cerographing, that is decided at once in favor of the latter. You may take this for granted. Cerographing will answer our purpose equally well, & will be cheaper.

~~But I have~~ not been able to get the maps accurately drawn, & the names properly inserted, to send you. This has caused the delay; nor can I tell when I can get it done. It needs to be well done & the only man capable of doing it here ~~that~~ I know of, I have engaged, but he is

unsteady, & has a good deal to do, & don't take hold.

The Boston School Atlas is about the size & quality that we want, & as Mr Warren Goodale of Marlboro, near you, has gone home I shall write him, to take that as his guide, & have the maps drawn & the names (in Hawaiian) inserted. He has been my clerk & understands what is wanted. I spoke to him before he left on the subject. Mr Bingham could do it well, but he is so dilatory that I fear the world would be so changed about, before that Atlas gets here, that it would be of no use.

I would like an edition of at least 5,000 copies, & the plates, so that we can print more here.

I will write Mr Goodale to call & see you at once, on the subject.

We are all extremely busy owing to the session of the Legislature & the Genl Meeting, at the same time. The Romanists have a violent Representative in the lower House

who is doing his utmost to give me trouble about the schools. What they want is to get the Catholic schools supported by gov.t into their own hands; that is, the priests manage the schools, & the gov.t pay the bills! But with all his violence he makes no headway, & the Committee on education will present a Report, I think, of quite a contrary character from what he (G. Rhodes) wishes. You will see my Report of Schools in the Polynesian.

There is a good spirit in the General Meeting, & I have no doubt, you will be satisfied with the result of their deliberations. They have some very unpleasant business to do. God give them grace & wisdom.

A vessel of about 100 tons has just been purchased, to take the brethren to Micronesia, to explore. They press me hard to accompany them, & I would like to do it, but just now it is out of the question. The gov.t will not let me off.

Yours &c,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong,

Honolulu, May 20, 1852,

Recd. July 17, 1852.

Ans. Nov. 3/52

(Private)

Honolulu,
June 8. 1852.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Boston.

My dear Brother;

Your favor of April 5th was received yesterday, & lest in the multitude of my cares, I forget it, I will say a word in reply at once.

In regard to Mr Castle, I think I can assure you, that there has been no movement on the part of the government, or its officers, to get him into its service, beyond informal talk of which I have heard more or less for ten years past. Consul Genl Miller, Geo. Moran & others used to speak openly to us all, of the importance of giving Mr Castle a high office. Mr Wyllie has a high opinion of him & would like to see him in the King's cabinet or in some high office. So has Judge Lee & so have I, were the way clear; but no office has ever been tendered to him, & I am not aware that any is about to be. But I must

frankly add, that in my opinion had a high office been tendered to Mr. Castle during the past few months, or were one tendered to him now, he would accept at once. And the reason is, the present relations between the mission & the Board are not satisfactory to him. I think Mr. C. considers that the Board has done wrong in reducing the support of the missionaries ten per cent; that if the Depository is brought to a close, he will be left to the hazzards, & perplexities of mercantile life, in a situation not very favorable, or turn to some other employment; & the latter he would prefer, as he is acknowledged to be capable of holding almost any office in the government, & were he free from the mission, I should be very glad to see him invested with one. He & I have talked these matters over frequently & freely, & I think the above is the truth. So that you must "put the boot now on the right leg."

I agree with you entirely that on the strength & success of the mission depends in a high degree, the strength of the nation, & the government, &

it was this that caused me to hesitate so long ~~in~~ regard to accepting ~~the~~ office I now hold; nor would I encourage Mr. C. or any one ~~else~~, under ordinary circumstances to leave the mission for a government office; but should Mr. C. make up his mind that it is his duty to leave the mission, then I think, you could not regard the government as unreasonable in giving him a post. This may be the case ere long. I shall not be surprised if it is. But Mr. C. will speak for himself when he gets to Boston, & I need not add more. I approve highly of his making you a visit; it will be worth a hundred fold more than it will cost. In fact, otherwise I do not think your business relations with the mission can be properly arranged. But it would be better still, could you or Mr. Hill come to the Islands.

As the Legislature meets at the same time with the Genl. meeting, I have been able to be present in the latter, but very little; but I have felt a very deep interest in the matters discussed, & I trust the result will be good. I would give you my views on some points, but I think you will have so much, that I ought ~~not~~ to add a single word. I have no doubt however but that you will be wisely direc-

-ted as heretofore, & that your plans will be made to succeed. Much prayer has been offered, & a good spirit seems to have pervaded the Meeting. We had the whole body ladies & all at our house to tea the other evening & I never saw them appear better on the whole.

I am as you suggest studying a new charter for Punahou School, & that will be easily managed; but what we want most is the man. This is indispensa-ble to the success of that institution. The joint letter of myself & Mr. Clark means a good deal more than it says.

Mr. Taylor is now laboring as our pas-tor & has just organized a church. We have a great work before us, but we "can do all things through Christ strength-ening us."

Let me request your attention to the Report of the Committee of the House of Com-mons on Education, in the Polynesian of the 5th inst. How indefatigable are the efforts of these Romanists in their cause? They will agitate the whole nation with trifles, & absurdities without shame, or prin-ciple, if they can find no grave matters to bring up. We shall expect Mr. Perrin to return from France in about 6 days & shall then know what is the will of Louis Napoleon concerning us. God our Redeemer has been & will be the rock of our defence.

The New Constitution was adopted yesterday by both houses of the Legislature. It will be a great improvement I think on the old. The clause excluding clergymen was stricken out after a discussion of about four days. In this discussion I took a prominent part, for I considered such a clause wrong in principle, & calculated to gratify the opposers of missionaries & of all religion, & to be a stigma on ministers of the gospel. The discussion developed more native eloquence than I ever before witnessed on the Islands. I wish you could have heard & understood I. Ii. His burst of Christian feeling moved every heart, & some of his strokes would have done honor to Patrick Henry. Ii is one of God's noblemen, meek & gentle as a lamb, but where he sees the religion of Christ assailed he is a lion. I do believe he would be a martyr, if called to it. You will be pleased to hear that by a donation of $50 to the Micronesian mission, he has made yourself, D. Pomroy, Mr Treat, & one or two others, life members of the society — a good *manao*. I suggest that you write him, when officially informed of the fact. Mr Young the Premier spoke

well also on the article alluded to.

The young princes Alexander & Lot have been pursuing a good course of late, & having taken a very active part in discussing the new Constitution. The King is up & down — at times very far gone. It is wonderful how he holds out.

The standard of education is rising on the Islands; & I think, we shall soon want Gov. Slade to take us into his school for the west. We are far west it is true, but where is it too far for yankee men or yankee girls to go? Our Royal school has now 86 scholars, & is brim-full! Mr. Beckwith is very popular & has given a new impulse to the schools of the place. God be praised for sending us such men — they are the best commodity imported here, & are deservedly entered free of duty. Without good men we cannot get along. It is my daily prayer that we may not be overrun with the ungodly.

Mrs. Armstrong has a bronchial affection which she got in the States, & suffers a good deal from it. She speaks of her visit at your house with great interest.

I have written you about the Atlas & also Mr. Goodale, who I think, can manage it.

Very truly, & affly. Yours,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. Richard Armstrong
[illegible]
[illegible]

(Private) 113

Honolulu,
June 15. 1852.

To Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

Dear Brother;

I have exami-
-ned the "Charter of the Punahou
School" with a good deal of care, & have
submitted it to our good & intelligent
friend, Judge Lee; but neither of
us could satisfy ourselves, as to just
what is needed; & I have concluded
to leave ~~it~~ out some of the clauses,
amplify the provisions in some
others, & send it to you that you may
alter it to suit your mind. Our Min-
-ister of the Interior will sign any
Charter that is reasonable, & you
need, not fear on that score, unless
some unfavorable change takes
place.

You will naturally confer with
Mr. Castle on the whole subject of the
Punahou School; & you will learn
from him more definitely what

sort of a man is wanted to be the Principal of the Institution. This is the great point in regard to that school, — the man. The feeling in the mission I think, is very general that unless there is another head, the school cannot be built up: Now is the time to get up a Christian institution, call it what we may, that will meet the wants of the Islands, & give shape & form to all other institutions, whether political, moral or religious. With God's help we must try to do this, & thus secure the Islands for our Lord & Saviour Jesus Christ.

As to Mr Castle, I think, his mind is made up not to be a merchant in Honolulu, if he can find other employment more congenial to his taste. There are one or two places in the government that he could fill to advantage, & he would like to, but no proposition has been made to him, & for one I feel unwilling to encourage his leaving the mission, in any way, & shall not favor his entering the service of the government, until I am satisfied that, his mind is fully

made up not to walk in the path you have marked out for him. The subject gives me some unpleasant feeling, & in fact the entire business relations existing between the Board & the mission, give me some uneasiness. I cannot see how the families can be supported without something equivalent to the Depository, or a great increase of salary.

Our new Constitution has passed & been signed, which will be an improvement, I think, in our government, unless France gives us more trouble & turns us over. But how the republican element in it, will work remains to be seen. We had need to work mightily to diffuse knowledge & virtue among the people, since they have so much power under the new Constitution. If God be for us however, we shall stand up, live & prosper; but our sins as a people are great & threaten to bring down his displeasure upon us.

In haste,

Very Truly Yours,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu, June 15, 1852

Recd. Sep. 2, 1852.

(Private)

Ans. Nov. 8/52

Pension —

Suggestions

Honolulu,
Nov. 20. 1852.

To Rev. R. Anderson D.D. }
Missionary House, Boston. }

Dear Brother;

In the midst of your numerous correspondents & heavy cares, I must not intrude so much upon your time. But I have a few things to say to you.

What can you do towards keeping the present Representatives of your government, Mr. Severence & Mr. Allen, here in office, when a new administration comes in at Washington? We are not to depend upon princes, nor any class of public functionaries, but in the living God, who rules among the nations; but God works by means, & we have no reason to expect his aid & blessing unless we use the means within our reach. We have from the late riot, fresh evidence of the wisdom, prudence, & friendship of the above named gentlemen

N.B. Some of the respectable residents here will make an effort also in behalf of Mr. Severence & Mr. Allen.

in the exercise of their respective offices. They are both just the men for this place; both on the best of terms with the officers of this government; both united in sustaining our laws, & regarding the interest of the King's subjects as well as those of their own countrymen; & both resolved to resist the unwarrantable encroachments of France upon the rights of this feeble nation. To loose these good men now after the experience they have acquired of our affairs, & the excellent course they have pursued, would be a great calamity; & when I reflect on the conduct of most of their predecessors, I dread the idea of a change, especially since our relations with the U. States are becoming every year more & more important & intimate. You will see at once, how your work at the Islands is affected by the course pursued by these officers, & if you can do any thing toward retaining Mr Severence & Mr Allen in office, I have no doubt you will do what is prudent in your circumstances. From the papers I judge that Genl Scott is likely to be president; if so, the above named gentlemen may be allowed to remain in office, as they are both whigs.

Mr & Mrs Hitchcock & son are about to sail for the States on a visit. I am glad of this step,

although they will be greatly missed on Molokai. They have been among our most devoted & laborious missionaries, & have in fact, become almost worn out in the service. A visit to you, may I hope will so restore them, that they may return & labor many years longer. They have felt some embarrassment in regard to taking their boy, Edward, but I think the Pru. Com. will not find fault when they hear all the circumstances. I shall feel anxious to hear how you have arranged matters with Mr Castle. Unless his mind is satisfied, I think, he will take some office on his return. If he should, dont blame the government, for Mr C. would have been in office long ago, if the government had tendered him one that he would like. He would make a good officer, but for one I want to see the way very clear, before I encourage missionaries to leave their post for secular employment.

Punahou School does not flourish, & it will not, until there is a new state of things. It wants a head, & a heart too, & until it has, it will not command the patronage of the public. Missionaries who can, are now sending their children to our Royal School; not merely those in Honolulu, but those who live on other Islands. This shows that they are not satisfied with Punahou, & it depresses & discourages the teachers there

which operates unfavorably on the school. What is wanted is two good teachers, beside Mr Rice, & a competent support provided for them, so as to reduce the expenses of the pupils to cost of board, lodging, books &c. Everything is so high here, that unless we can manage to reduce the expenses of education, but few can afford to seek it.

The buildings at Lahainaluna are not substantial; & we have been obliged of late to take down, the south wing altogether. I fear the whole concern will tumble down before many years.

We are in great need of the new Atlas, & I hope Mr Goodale has executed his commission before this & got the work done. I could think of no way so good as this to secure the object. I have visited all the schools on Kauai & Niihau, & most of those on Oahu, during the summer, & found them all greatly in want of the Atlas. Mr Rogers is in poor health & we are badly off to get native printing done. The government must undertake it, I think.

Mrs Armstrong unites with me in kind regards to yourself & family, & associates in the Miss'y House.

Very Truly Yours

R. Armstrong.

Rev. Richard Armstrong, Honolulu, Nov. 20, 1851. Jan. 15, 1853

Ans.

Honolulu,
Feb. 12. 1853.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss'y House, Boston

Dear Sir;

I am directed by the Executive Committee of the Board of Trustees for Punahou School, to address you again, in regard to the new teacher for that institution, who has been the subject of correspondence hitherto. By your letter to me of Nov. 3, we learn with regret, that you had suspended further search for the person desired, until you should hear from Mr Castle, after his return to the Islands. There was probably some misunderstanding on this point, between you & he, I think he only requested you not to actually send out the man, until you heard from him, but that it would be well to search for one & have him in view. The suspension might have arisen from what was said of Mr Geo. Beckwith, brother of the present teacher of our Roy-

al school, who had sailed for the Islands, & it was thought might be a suitable man to fill the post at Punahou. That gentleman has arrived, and after being conversed with freely, & having visited the school, signified a decided unwillingness to go there in the capacity spoken of. He brings with him a good reputation as a teacher, but he is young, has never been principal of a high school, has a weakness of the eyes, & withal is unmarried, which is no small objection. Moreover his labors are needed in the Royal School, and his brother is anxious to have him employed there.

You will see at once then the importance of using energetic measures to procure a suitable man for Punahou without delay. The interests of the school are suffering & will continue to suffer more & more, until such a person is on the ground. As to the character & qualifications of the person contemplated, you already know, the mission feel no ordinary degree of interest. If Mr. Dole teaches the languages as contemplated, he will find nearly, if

not quite enough to do in that department, & the new teacher, although expected to be the Principal, will have the primary branches to teach; not exclusively doubtless, for he may expect assistance where needed; but it is very important that he be qualified & willing to teach those branches; otherwise there will still be a great want in the school, that cannot but impair its usefulness.

There are not materials now there for commencing a College course, except to a very small extent. Two of the youth might enter upon such a course in ~~the cour~~ a short time. But several of the more advanced scholars contemplate going to the States, during the present year, in order to go to College, & this will continue to be the case until we have something like a college here. The work to be done at Punahou will be for the present, therefore mostly preparatory to a college; but if the school can be made to flourish, it will soon, it is hoped, grow into what we contemplate & desire. The new teacher should well understand this position of affairs, & come prepared, not

merely to preside & teach some of the more important branches; but the primary branches also as far as necessa-ry under present circumstances.

It is very important that he be a married man, as there is much there for the ladies to do, in superintending the domestic establishment, & watching over the young pupils, in the absence of their anxious mothers, many of whom live on other Islands. A knowledge of music is another important requisite, either of the teacher or of his wife. But our former letters have been so full in regard to the requisite qualifications, that it is needless to say more here.

The "Charter" you had the goodness to have prepared, is much approved, with one or two small exceptions; but it is thought best, to delay submitting it to the government until the mission comes together. There will be no difficulty in regard to the charter, & we hope you will proceed to secure the endowment of one or two professorships at Punahou, as soon as possible.

On behalf of the Ex. Committee,
I am with Christian regard,
Your humble servant,
R. Armstrong.

Rev. Richard Armstrong.
Honolulu, Feb. 12, 1853.
Recd April 26 1853

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

116. A.L. to R. Anderson; 16 Feb. 1853
117. A.L. to R. Anderson; 27 May 1853
118. A.L. to H. Hitchcock; 13 June 1853
119. A.L. to R. Anderson; 30 June 1853
120. A.L. to R. Anderson; 9 July 1853
121. A.L. to R. Anderson; 11 Aug. 1853

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

(Confidential)

Honolulu, Feb. 16. 1854.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

My Dear Brother;

I must add a few words to the within letter. A new element is evidently needed & that very urgently at Punahou, & the sooner you send the man long asked for the better. Mr. Dole is much esteemed, as a faithful teacher, learned & laborious, but the fact that some 14 children of the mission families ~~those~~ have been transferred to the Royal School, shows that there is something wanting at Punahou, that needs to be remedied. What others have feared is that you might select a man rather calculated to be president of a college, than a practical every day teacher, as is needed in the school. You perceive this, as is evident from a remark in your letter to me of Nov. 3d last, for which long letter I owe you many thanks. But it should not be understood that the new teacher is to be confined to teaching the elementary branches; in fact it is not expected that the very lowest branches be taught in the school

at all; the new teacher however should be able willing & fond of teaching those branches.

Another point is the support of the new teacher, or rather of all the teachers there. Will it be possible to procure a suitable person to come out & labor on missionary support? I have thought not. I pay Mr Beckwith $1500 a year & this is only common good clerks wages in Honolulu. He has a room besides. But as you contemplate endowing the institution, no doubt, the salaries of the teachers will thereby be duly provided for. In taking with endowment there will be no need to wait for the new Charter. Unless some disaster occurs, that can be obtained as soon as it has the approval of the full board of trustees. With the government, I apprehend, no difficulty.

Printing native books is another matter of importance. In your General letter you well speak of reclaiming the press with more vigor. This is well; it is essential. But I learn from Mr Castle, that the appropriation for the mission for the present year, will not allow of devoting any portion of it to printing native books, & yet there are 5 or 6 elementary works of great importance that

are out of print & should be put to press at once. How is it to be done? The Legislature in July last, allowed me $1000, for publishing in native. Of this I have given $500 to support the Elele (native newspaper) & shall devote the balance to publishing some elementary work. But this is far from meeting the wants of the people in regard to books. We are very badly off indeed in this respect. Several works that have been published on the funds of the Tract Society, are also out of print, & should be republished at once, but that society has no funds here. Perhaps, in this state of things, the printing Com. will go on & publish, trusting to future appropriations. I will get all I can justly from Govt. for this object, but our treasury is low this year & I cannot hope for a great deal. The Elele must be sustained, & as Mr. Rogers health is very feeble & he is quite unable to conduct the paper, I have resumed the work, which I laid down five years ago, although I have not the time or strength for it. I hope to get enough from Govt. to meet its cost, at least; for it has never paid for itself. Your printing establishment here does need to be carried on with more vigor most truly, or we must expect a retrograde movement.

The map I feel bad about. Our schools are suffering greatly for the want

of them; but I have not been able as yet to get a correct copy with native names to send you. I cannot find the men to do the work, although some progress has been made. I live in hopes however, & as soon as I get a copy proper to send, it will be on the way to you, & I beg that you will drive it through.

The King is very sick, & I fear will not last much longer. You are not ignorant of the cause.

M. Perrin, the French Consul, has been here for some weeks. He brings very friendly assurances from Napoleon III. & proposes to make a new treaty; but has done nothing yet. Prospects for an amicable adjustment are favorable. The Lord has his eye upon his little Zion here for good & we may safely trust him for the future.

Your last genl. letter I like much. Every thing seems to be plain now for proceeding on the new basis; but you must expect that the salaries will have to be raised a good deal, in order to enable the families to live. You are liberal souls, although you may not be fat, & will do what is proper in the case. May our blessed Redeemer give us all grace & wisdom, to serve him in the best manner unto the end.

Mrs Armstrong unites with me in kind & grateful regards to Mrs Anderson & yourself,

As ever Yours Truly, R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong (Hawaii)
Honolulu, Feb. 16, 1853.
Rec'd [illegible] 8, 1853.

Honolulu May 27 1853

To Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Pemberton square
Miss'y House, Boston

Dear Sir;

By the direction of the board of trustees of the Punahou school I enclose herewith a copy of the New Charter of incorporation granted by the government a few days since for that institution. This you requested & it is evident that you need it in seeking the means of carrying out your plans in reference to that school. You will perceive that it remains almost precisely as it came from your hands. The alterations are very trifling as you will see by the report of a committee of the general meeting & of which I herewith send a copy.

I am directed also to urge the board to loose no time more than is absolutely necessary; in sending out the additional teacher who has been asked for. The necessity of the school has become more urgent now, that Mr. Marsh who has devoted his afternoons to hearing some classes during the past year, has found it necessary to leave it owing to the amount of business in my office which requires all his time. Mr. Rice can render no assistance in teaching, & Mrs. Dole, & Mrs. Rice, having families & not enjoying the best of health can

render but little; So that the burden of the school must now be sustained chiefly by Mr. Dole with the assistance of Miss Mary Green, who has been employed there, during part of the year past until a new teacher comes to take up that part of the work.

The trustees & all the friends of the institution here are very anxious that such a teacher should arrive soon & relieve it from its embarrassed condition.

We hope to hear soon that one has been selected & is on his way to the Islands; & may the great Head of the Church send us one who is well adapted to the situation & who will be instrumental in doing great good to our youth.

With fraternal regards,
I remain your obt. servant

R. Armstrong.
Sec. of Board of Trustees.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu May 27/53

Recd. Aug 11/53

Ans. Nov. 18/53

Teacher for College

Honolulu, June 13. 1853.

Dear Mr. Hitchcock;

Your full, long & very satisfactory letter, closed in Dr. Andersons study on Ap. 16, came to hand a few days since & afforded us much gratification. It was more than I expected of you, considering how many & more worthy correspondents you have here. I bless God for his goodness to you, & I honor Dr. A. & family for giving you so kind a reception. It cannot but infuse new life into your whole frame of body & mind to be in the midst of such scenes. May it be so wherever you go, so that you will your thirty, sixty or hundred fold full measure, pressed down & running over, for all you have done & suffered on missionary ground.

To day I send to Dr. Anderson a copy of part of Mitchells Atlas with ~~the~~ native names to be cerographed by Mr. Morse in New York & I want you to take hold of it & push it through, if it needs any attention. I fear they will not understand the native words, & I wish you would see

Armstrong

to it, ~~that~~ is correctly done. If this copy will not answer, or if more names should be put on, employ some good pen man to do it, who understands it, & Dr. A- will pay all the bills. I will all also meet any reasonable expense you will be at to get this Atlas cerographed as soon as possible & sent out. If the words will not answer, then just have the places on the maps marked by numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, &c, & the native names with corresponding numbers can be printed here. Some Maps are thus printed in our own language. But this is not so good as having the names on the map.

I send the manuscript to Dr. Anderson & shall authorize him to get it done as soon & as low as he can, & pay for it. An addition of 5.000 copies I do not expect will cost more than $600.00 or there abouts. We do want it exceedingly for our schools. They are suffering every day for want of it. Help it then all you can.

As to matters here I hardly know what selection to make in speaking of them. The General Meeting has closed. I saw but little of it, being in the Legislature daily & very busy. We have had some good meetings, very good. The miss[ionary] cause is advancing & it is

~~[illegible]~~ 1st. I have about concluded to visit my native town next week. & accompany [illegible] to Washington. I am very anxious to see the [illegible] also with your questions with regard to what help I can render [illegible]

most pleasing to see the native churches & our own dear children so enlisted in the work. A Marquesan chief from the Island of Fatu-hiwa, arrived here some three months ago, in pursuit of teachers to go home with him & teach his people. He would not be put off, & our society has concluded to send with him 2 native preachers, Kekela & Kauwealoha & their wives & two teachers Kuaihelani (of Ewa) & Kapahi (of Mr Smith's church) & Mr Parker goes with them to return. The matter has taken deep hold of the people here & contributions are liberal. In Mr Clark's ch. Sab. before last, $600. was raised over & above the ordinary subscription to the society. There were seven fifty dollar subscriptions among the natives. The mission is ready to sail, may be off tomorrow. I bless God for all these signs of the times. The Saviour will have the Marquesans yet, & after repeated failures on the part of the white man to evangelize Islands, I hope the honor of the victory will now be given to those nearer of skin, color & character. Lots of our best natives would go, if they had liberty.

Miss Brown spent a day with us a little while ago, & I grieve to tell you that things go no better at your Station than they used to. What the remedy is, I do not know

but that the cause dearest to our hearts is suffering, there is no question. C. B. Andrews feels as Miss B. does; they dined with us to-gether. .... You will be sorry to hear that the small pox is here & spreading among the people. There have been, I think, as many as 100 cases on this Island, & about one fourth of them died thus far. We have done our best in vaccinating & are at it all the while, but still many very many will die. It has reached Hawaii & perhaps Maui.)

In the Legislature we have not done much this year, & now are stuck on the bill of appropriations. O how I hate politics! So much shameless, barefaced & disgusting self seeking, money seeking, place seeking! If you want to see the darkest shades of depravity look into some Legislature. The King has been very, very sick, nigh unto death, & he is very feeble. You know the cause. Liho-liho & Lot are so so, - plenty of room for improve-ments, though in the House of Nobles they are active & influential.

Our daughter Carrie & Mr. Beckwith were married in April. They live in the old Royal School premises & seem to be very happy.

15. We fast to-day in view of the small pox God help us, the help of man fails.

I will not send the Atlas until next mail. It is not quite ready.

Love to Mrs. H. & the boys. We are all well. Mrs. A. will write.

Yours aff. R. Armstrong.

Honolulu, June 30. 1853.

To Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother;

I am obliged to write you in haste on account of the small pox that rages fearfully here among the natives, & demands our whole time & attention. I am in it all the day long & such spectacles of suffering I never expected to see on earth as I now behold every hour of the day.

I send herewith as good a copy of an Atlas as I can get made here, at least, all of it except two sheets, which will be forwarded next mail. I think the cerographing will answer very well & will be much cheaper than engraving. Please therefore to have the Atlas cerographed.

I fear however that the copy is still not what it should be, and that the native names will not be easily made out. Should this be the case,

~~let~~ figures be inserted for the names of places, towns, cities &c. instead of the native words, after the manner of Bliss' Atlas, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, &c. I am not sure but this would be the better way under all the circumstances of the case, lest great mistakes be made in the native words. The native names we can print here, to correspond with the numbers on the Atlas, if this plan be adopted.

Should the other plan be adopted, that is of inserting the Hawaiian words, I would suggest, that you request our good brother Hitchcock to examine the proofs, & see the work through the press. I have written him to do so, & I will meet any expense he may incur on this account. We want the work as soon as possible, & I have no doubt, you will push it through as soon as it can be done & send it out together with the bill of costs. Our schools are suffer-ing every day for want of it. I think an edition of 5.000 copies may be struck off at present. Can the plates be sent us, so that we can strike off

more when we need them? If so, it will a great convenience. You had better send the loose sheets as the binding can be done here, & if the names are to be printed here on separate sheet they can be bound together to correspond with the maps in their proper places.

Please give this as early attention as possible, or roll it off unto Br. Hitchcock, with an injunction that he take hold of it, with his accustomed energy & zeal.

I remain as ever
Very Truly Your Brother
in Christ.
R. Armstrong

R. Armstrong

Honolulu June 20/53

Recd. Sept 12/53

Ans. Nov. 18

Mail sent to New York
Oct. 19/53

120

R. Armstrong
Honolulu July 9/53
Recd. Sept 12/53
Ans.: Nov. 18

Atlas

Honolulu,
July 9. 1853.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother;

I send by to-days mail the remaining sheets of the Atlas. The Hemispheres are just taken from Andrews Atlas made here at the Islands, & not very accurate, but sufficiently so I think.

I fear none of the copy is what it should

be, & if so, the plan I suggested in my last will be best — just have an Atlas struck after the plan of Bliss, with figures — numbers for the places on the map, & we can suit the names to them here on separate sheet, & have them bound together.

You have no time to devote to this perplexing business, & you must just roll it off, as I said before on Bro. Hitchcock. He will need some work to keep him from rusting.

These are dark days for our poor natives. The smallpox rages fearfully & what the end is to be God only knows. I do little else but attend to the sick & dying; so of many about me. It is an awful scourge.

Please urge on the Atlas as fast as possible. Our schools have been suffering a long time for want of it.

Truly Yours

R. Armstrong

Honolulu, Aug. 11. 1853.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Boston.

My dear Brother;

Your favor of May 14th came to hand sometime since & I thank you sincerely for still remembering me in the midst of your many cares.

The Seamens Friends Society did send out an order for $1000 on Mr Taylors Society & it was paid! Zereno Bishop brought it. I regret it, inasmuch as the society here is young & poor, & has to struggle to support its pastor, & get a house of worship. But I trust, there is enough of the spirit of Christ among us, not to cherish hard feelings on account of the matter.

The maps I have sent to you, such as they were; but I fear the copy was not what it should be. If so, just have an Atlas struck off with figures in the place of the names, & the latter in native we can print here.

I hope ere this too, you have received the copy of the Charter for the Punahou School & Oahu College. An official copy was sent some time since.

I feel a good deal of solicitude as to the character of the new Commissioner & Consul. We can hardly expect two more such men as Severance & Allen.

The Polynesian will tell you of the storm that is raised to get Dr. Judd & myself out of office. What the result will be, I do not know; but the grounds set forth in the petition to the King for our removal are so monstrous, that I do not imagine he or his Councillors will take much notice of them. But the movement is among foreigners, sustained by the Catholic & Mormon portion of the natives on this Island, & so enfeebled is the native population by the smallpox & so bold & daring are these foreigners, that they may throw us into confusion, upset the government, & either keep it or bring about annexation as soon as they can. Some of the leaders go over to California this week & it is thought their design is to try to get force from there. In this they may succeed, & be ready when the whaling ships are in

in the fall to make a strong effort to get the government into their hands.

I regard the movement as only another developement of the anti-temperance, anti-missionary, anti-religious element that has always existed among a portion of the residents, & which has supported the opposition paper here. We are regarded as the men in the government who uphold regid temperance laws & habits, laws against licentiousness, against violations of the Sabbath. Aside from this too Dr. Judd has a good many personal enemies, who dislike his ways, & have old grudges against him. My removal is sought so far as I can learn, not because they have any real malfeasance in office to lay to my account, but because they want another policy entirely. The present time of distress, when everybody is in a complaining & fault finding mode, is seized upon to raise public indignation against us, & storm at the King until he removes us from office.

Not knowing what the result may be & thinking it safe to look ahead, I wish to ask the Prudential Committee through you, if they will allow me

to return to the mission, in case I leave the government, or am thrown out with no blemish on my character as a minister of Christ, or as a Christian. Bro. Clark & I have often talked the matter over, & could easily arrange as to the labor at the station, of which there is no lack for half a dozen men. He will probably write you on the subject. You are aware that I took the office with reluctance, have never liked it so well as preaching, & if it be God's will I will gladly return to the pulpit & to pastoral labors. But the schools are important, vitally so. When they go down, or go into bad hands, the last ray of hope for Hawaiians will perish. I shall therefore hold on as long as it shall seem to be duty, & I only make the above inquiry, in view of a possible contingency. Having a large family it will not do for me to be long out of employment. I have kept up my preaching habits, & am surrounded by the people to whom I ministered for eight years. But my health is rather poor, & I cannot expect to labor on many years longer. Please write me in regard to my return to the mission. Aug. 16. I think we shall have a revolution or annexation soon.

Truly Yours, R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu Aug. 16. 53
Recd. [illegible]
Ans. [illegible]

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

122. A.L. to [ ]; 29 Aug. 1853
123. A.L. to [ ]; 10 Sept. 1853
124. A.L. to Central Committee of American Missions; 9 Jan. 1854
125. A.L. to R. Anderson; 16 March 1854

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

126. A.L. to R. Anderson; 3 June 1854
127. A.L. to S.B. Treat; 21 Aug. 1854
128. A.L. to S.B. Treat; Sept. 1854
129. A.L. to S. B. Treat; 6 Sept. 1854
130. A.L. to S.B. Treat; 9 Nov. 1854

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

(Private & confidential)

Honolulu, Aug. 29. 1853.

Rev. & dear Sir;

I wrote you a short time since in regard to our political troubles, & need only refer you to the late numbers of the Polynesian for the details of what has passed. As I intimated all this agitation has had one direct tendency & that is to lead the King & Chiefs to think of annexing their Islands to the U. States. The reasons are obvious 1. The native population is passing away now more rapidly than ever; consequently production, consumption, revenue & all sorts of business decrease in proportion. The nation in short grows weaker & less able to sustain an independent government every day. And there is no brighter prospect ahead so far as the native race is concerned.

2. The white race on the Islands generally go for annexation, because it is their interest to do so. The most important branch of agriculture is sugar growing, but the 30 per ct. duty on sugar in California & Oregon, takes away all

P.S. Perhaps you had better keep this to yourself entirely unless you hear again.

the profits. Hence they want annexation, though they are not at all unfriendly to the present government. Merchants go for annexation, because there being agriculture carried on, their business would increase. Mechanics, those who are intelligent, have the same view. Another class are & always have been opposed to the present government, because of the high moral tone of the laws. They oppose the legal restraints on licentiousness, on Sabbath breaking, drunkenness, & the manufacture of spirits. But for these they would not care much about annexation. Such are some of the prominent persons who have attempted to get Dr. Judd & myself out of office, & are resolved upon it. They declare themselves directly opposed to the penal laws refered to. See an article by J. Montgomery in the Polyn. of last week with the editor's comments on it. Mr. M. is now the leader of the "independent party". He is an Irish lawyer, & his private character is just what you would suppose from that article.

It being the interest or inclination therefore of almost the entire foreign population to seek annexation with the U. States

it is not difficult to find pretexts for agitation, & disturbing the government. The leaders in the present opposition to myself & Dr Judd do not declare themselves for annexation; but it is supposed by those acquainted with their movements that they want to get into power & then annex the Islands to suit themselves, of this I have little doubt. It is a fact too that many of our English residents desire annexation. But the English & French consuls are to have an audience with the King & council on thursday next in regard to late events. It is thought they will demand the dismissal of Judd & myself, as we being americans are thought to favor annexation. If they do, I think Mr Severence will interfere & put in a counter demand. So that you see we are in a whirl of political agitation.

A memorial signed by 19 of our most wealthy merchants has been sent in to the King recommending annexation with the U. States. Our good friend Castle is one of the memorialists. The King and chiefs are by themselves considering the matter very deliberately. The Young Prince, expecting to come to the throne ere long, is reluctant of course to relinquish the prospect of such an elevation. But he is very sensable & I thinks sees that his

reign is on the throne to-day would be a troubled one, & probably a short one. There is absolutely no comfort in getting along as we have done with so much weakness contending with so much greater strength. We have neither army, nor navy, — nothing but the justice of our govt. to rest upon.

What renders the case of the govt. much worse is the habits of the King. He is much broken down by those habits & unfit for business a large part of the time. The Premier is also far gone, & the young Prince has made a fair beginning in the same course. So much for the fruits of moderate drinking. The old Chiefs stand however like oaks amidst the falling forests, & are noble specimens of men & Christians. Paki said to me to-day, tell our missionary folks in the United States, if we are annexed, they must help us to get liberal terms, for we look to them as our true friends. I told him I would do so, & he might rely upon your good offices, & prayers.

Mr. Allen now out of office takes an active part to bring about annexation. He is on good terms with all the government officers & carries a good deal of weight. Mr. Severence is a good man for the times — cool, ready at all points, & sees his way clearly.

It has been a time of great excitement & my health suffers from it. My skin is too thin for such times. I can sympathise with David, King of Israel when he wrote some of the Psalms. My hope is that by looking to God, whatever becomes of the government, his cause will prosper; that we shall be able to save our institutions, & the rights of the native race will be protected. I have been slow to countenance annexation, but I am forced to the conclusion, that negotiations had better be commenced, to bring it about in an amicable way, and on liberal terms now, rather than wait until it must be sought in the midst of anarchy & distress, as was the case with Texas. That it must come, or something worse, I have no doubt, & the only question is one of time. A leader of the independent party has gone to California on some business connected with late movement here, & it is believed, will stir up there a party for annexation at all events. Many adventurers would like to come to the Islands, & join the

party here in overturning the government, taking it into their own hands & then annexing the Islands perhaps in a way to suit themselves; but being conquerors they would do as they pleased with native rights. There are some ambitious spirits too among us who would like to try their hand at keeping up an independent government on more liberal principles; that is abolish all restrictions on the sale & manufacture of spirits, on licentiousness, sabbath desecration & the like, & to modify the whole gov^t. as to please the foreign population generally; But it is not difficult to foresee what the result of such a policy would be. It would be as ruinous as the smallpox, & end in a miserable annexation at last.

By next mail I may be able to write you what conclusion the King & chiefs have come to in regard to the whole matter. I may feel it to be my duty to resign my office ere long, or to be removed from it, in which case I shall with great cheerfulness return to the Stone Church. I think, it will be a great relief when I get away from these disagreeable excitements.

This is marked private, but you may make such use of my statements as will do good & not harm in any quarter you choose.

Aff^ly Yours, R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong.
Honolulu Aug. 2 '53
Rec'd Oct. 3 '53
Ans. Apr. 8

strong
(Private.) 123

..le Sept 10/53
..ed. Nov 11/53

Honolulu,
Sep.r 10. 1853.

..y 67

Rev. & Dear Mother;

I promised in my last to keep you informed in regard to our political troubles, especially on the subject of annexation. The Polynesians of last week & this will reveal to you all that is made public. See Mr Severence letter in to days paper, & also the new appointments by the King. Mr Allen is well known to favor annexation, has done it openly, & yet he has been appointed one of the King's ministers! This plea

Let ~~the~~ Americans & even some of the English much. To night ~~they~~ are to have a procession & a great demonstration on account of Dr Judd's removal & Mr. Allen's election. Agitation for the present seems to be at an end, but I do not anticipate long quiet. The annexation question will be agitated, ere long if I mistake not, although the memorial refered to in my letter has been laid on the table by the King & chiefs, without even asking the opinions of his foreign advisors. They think the time has not yet come, & the young

prince Liholiho wishes to hold on to the govt. as long as he can, which is natural. Would that Providence would so ordain that this govt. might stand independent: it is far better for the native race than annexation, from which I fear they would suffer greatly in time. But it is a question how long it can stand, with its growing weakness. What I feel most anxious about, is to save what we have gained; our Christian institutions, churches, schools, protestant religion, order, righteous laws &c. Will not God hear our prayers & preserve these for his own name's sake?

Dr Judd's removal will

no doubt take you by surprise.) For years he had been growing more & more unpopular, more owing to an offensive way of doing things, than ~~from~~ for any wrong doing; & now he has ~~not lost the~~ confidence of those who know him best; nor do I think he has forfeited his christian character & claim to our confidence.

Opposition to myself was mainly on account of my supposed connection with the Dr & now it appears to have ceased with his removal. Still there is a strong anti-mission-ary party who will try to get me out of office.

All this is internos.

Very truly Yours,

R. Armstrong.

Rep. R. Armstrong
Honolulu
Rec

Honolulu, Jan. 9. 1854.

To the central Committee }
of the American Mission. }

Dear Brethren;

On my recent tour around East Maui, I had a good deal of conversation with the church members & others in that region, especially with those recently under the care of Mr. Whittlesey. I endeavored to look into their spiritual condition & wants, & to draw out their views, as to the future, to whom they expected to look for pastoral care & guidance & who was to break to them the bread of life. The church members in Kaupo, Kipahulu, & Hana (I did not get round to Koolau on account of the storms) seemed to be much interested in the question, said they had thought of it much, but did not know what to do. Some of them had been to see Mr. Andrews of Molokai, to ascertain whether he would consent to be their minister, but got no encouragement. The people of Kaupo spoke of employing a promising young man by the name

of Mauae, a recent graduate of the Seminary at Lahainaluna, & spoken well of by the teachers of that institution; & with the general superintendance of an efficient minister at Hana, I think he would do good service there. But the people of Kipahulu & Hana, both large & considerably populous districts, could think of no way for supplying their spiritual wants, except to apply to the mission at its next general meeting & this I think they will do.

After going once more over that field, looking at the state of things, & conversing freely with many of the people, I was deeply impressed with the importance of placing a pastor in that field with the shortest possible delay. The reasons are obvious. 1. There is a great want of intelligent & pious natives in that field, who might be employed as spiritual guides to the church. The one above mentioned is the most so of any that I know of. Kamakau as you are aware is a circuit judge, & must remove to Lahaina. He is not of the right stamp were he to remain in that field, though in many respects an excellent man. I know of no part of the Islands where pious & intelligent natives are so few as in this. Hence

the church is in a peculiarly needful condition. 2. The field is very remote from any missionary station, & the roads are bad for travelling. Two days & a half or three days are usually required to ride on horseback from Wailuku or Makawao the nearest stations to the station at Hana. Hence the church in that field can receive but little aid from the pastors at either of those places, however zealous & energetic they might be. 3. It is a very large field & needs the labours of a whole man, the strongest man that can be found – a man of firm health, strong body, active habits, & of an humble, self-denying & energetic spirit. A missionary might be well employed in each of the districts of Kaupo, Kipahulu, Hana & Koolau; but this being out of the question, I think, one ought to be stationed somewhere in the centre, at or near where Mr. Whittesey has lived, (though I do not think that is so healthy a place as some others in the region, nor is it so agreeable) & he would have as has been the case to rely on native helpers at the outposts. 4. The enemy is busy at work there. Catholics & Mormons have made a good many converts

& they are now taking every advantage of the destitute condition of the field. Within a short time I will be able to tell you from the returns of the census just how the matter stands in this respect & to tell just what the population is.

For these reasons, I submit, for your consideration whether application should not be made to the Board to send a man without delay for that field. I am decidedly of opinion that this ought to be done in good earnest. The case does not admit of delay. There are too many souls there, & the enemy is too busy among them, to allow of feeble measures. I will add, that in Kaupo & Koolau, there was a good state of religious feeling, in fact something like a revival. Many had turned away from the Romanists & Mormons, & were seeking the "old paths" & the "good way"; but many of them seemed to be very dark minded & will need to be nursed like babes. O what a task! You know what it is. No one does but those who have tried it.

I address you this, dear brethren, because I promised the good people in that field to speak in their behalf, & I could not think how it could be better done, than to call your attention to the subject.

Ever Yours &c.

R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu, Jany [illegible]

Honolulu, Mar. 16. 1854.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Sec. of A.B.C.F.M,

My dear Brother;

Your letters of Dec. 19. & Jan. 17th have been received & I shall endeavor to reply to the same in as satisfactory a manner as the case will admit of.

In regard to the "President" Mr. Dole is appointed to write you distinctly & separately; that point I shall pass over.

The name cannot be changed without application to the government to alter the charter in that particular; which can easily be done; but as the mission is soon to come together it is thought best to defer the application until that time. The "Oahu Collegiate institute" is spoken of as a more appropriate name than "Oahu College", as we have no college, & there is no telling when we shall have one. But this will be attended to.

You request evidence that the charter has gone into operation, & been duly recognized by the Trustees, I therefore certify that on the 23rd day of May A. D. 1853 the following Trustees were duly elected & organized according to the provisions of the new charter, & that they accepted the trust imposed upon them,

Rev. Asa Thurston, Rev. E. W. Clark, Rev. D. B. Lyman, Wm P. Alexander, Rev. S. C. Damon, Rev. L. Smith, Rev. R. Armstrong & Rev. L. Smith, Rev. D. Dole, & Rev. D. Baldwin.

I also certify that said Trustees have met from time to time for the transaction of business since the above date; that they keep regular records of their proceedings, & have proceeded in accordance with the provisions of the charter.

The Officers of the Board of Trustees are President, Rev. S. C. Damon, Secretary Rev. R. Armstrong, Treasurer S. N. Castle."

You will doubtless regret to hear that Mr Rice has resigned his post in the school. His resignation was tendered to the Trustees on the 7th March, present, on which

the following resolution was adopted,

"Resolved, That the Trustees regret the necessity felt by Mr Rice for resigning his post in the school; they cordially express their appreciation of the long & valuable services of Mr & Mrs Rice therein & their esteem for them as faithful laborers in the sphere they have so long occupied."

Mr Rice assigns his reasons for leaving the school in the following note which I copy:

"Punahou School, Mar. 15. 1854.

To the Board of Trustees of the Punahou School;

Gentlemen;

As it has been thought desirable for me to state more fully my reasons for resigning my post here, I have no objections to doing so.

In the first place Mrs Rice's health is altogether inadequate to the care & toil which has & must devolve upon her here. She has endured far beyond what I five years ago thought she would be able to endure. I think, it was five years ago that I informed the Trustees that "unless an arrangement could

be made to relieve ~~her~~ us from the care of the boarding establishment we should find it necessary in all probability before many years to resign our place here. For the last two years Mrs R. has been afflicted with a nervous affection of the heart, which has somewhat increased, & which with the care of a family of five children of her own, & her constitution not vigorous, render a release from her cares in connection with this school absolutely essential.

I might also state that our eldest daughters health has been such for the last few months that the constant noise & excitement of such a large family is exceedingly injurious to her, if not dangerous; she having had two attacks of brain fever within a few months & a constant tendency to a return of the same.

These appear to me rational & sufficient reasons for tendering my resignation to you, as I did something more than two months ago.

There are various minor reasons which to us seem to render a change desirable, but I need not specify further.

Signed W. H. Rice.

The letter you refer to as having been written by you on the 11th Nov. has never come to hand. The Nov. mail, I believe, has never come to hand. It is supposed to have been lost, or to have been taken to China.

Mr Dole write you fully in regard to the "Principal" for the School. If we could have a man of the right qualifications to teach the primary as well as higher branches, good at governing & superintending the School, & at the same time, a missionary, it would suit us better. There will be plenty of work & care, & poor pay probably. I think our youth who wish to go to College will prefer to go to the States for some time, for two reasons, it is cheaper & the advantages are greater.

We have much discussion & agitation here in regard to annexation. One party among residents go for an independent republic, another

for annexation at once, another for maintaining the present government. The natives are generally against annexation, yet some are for it. Mr Marsh who has been in my office, has started an independent native paper, for discussing all manner of political questions, that is making quite a sensation. The British and French consuls are in a rage about it. They think that annexation is the aim of it. Such is the state of things, that I shall not be disappointed, if I am removed from office any time.

What about our Atlas? Do please inform me. Mr Hitchcock wrote me that he had corrected one of the proofs & that is all I have heard. We are in great want of it.

Very respectfully & truly Yours,

R. Armstrong.

P.S. I thank you for the copy of your Report.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu Mar. 16/54

Recd. June 10/54

Ans. June 13th

Seminary

Trustees —

& Board Ed.

(Private) 126

Honolulu, June 3. 1854.

R. Anderson D. D.,
Mifs^y House, Boston.

My dear Brother;

Not until a day or two since did I receive your favor of Nov. 18, 1853. It has been to China & back. I had wondered what had become of the maps & it is gratifying to learn though at a late hour, that they were in progress. So my dear Brother, hasten the work or rather, commit it, if possible, to hands that will hasten it, for I am aware of your burdens & cares, too heavy for any one man; & let us have the maps. Our common schools have done little in teaching geography for two years, for want of maps. Can we have the plates, or stone also, that we work off another edition when needed?

Poor dear Father Taylor, a good man honoured of God, & greatly beloved by his people here, has consumption, has taken a dismission from his church & gone to Tahiti to try the effect of a

voyage. What a mysterious Providence! Every thing connected with the church & society looked bright & flourishing. Suddenly a cloud has come over it. Its component parts are so various, having the elements of Methodism, Baptism, Presbyterianism, congregationalism, that I fear greatly there will be disunion & distraction, in procuring another pastor. The proposition now is (I do not belong to the church, but my family worships there & I contribute; as I prefer to remain with Bro. Clark in the first native church,) to apply to Dr. Robinson, Mr. Spalding & H. W. Beecher, of N. York for a man to supply Mr. Taylor's place.

As to Punahou, Mr. Dole has written you, in answer to your inquiry whether we want a "President" or not. We have not the material to make a College of & shall not have for years; & let no man come out, expecting to be President of a College at present, or within a short time. The school is composed of pupils from a, b, c, to the classics, & mathematics as they are usually taught in your select schools or academies; and as fast as our youth are fit for College they are off for the States. The reason

is obvious - it is cheaper by far to send them there, than to educate them here, even counting the expense of the voyage & the advantages are greater than we can have here at present. So that if we had a College in full blast at Punahou to-day, our youth with few exceptions would prefer to go to the States. I could not board my son here, for $300 a year, & that meets his *entire* expenses there. *But we want a principal for the school* as it is.

I showed Mr. Allen that part of your letter that relates to him, & it gratified him much. He wished me to convey his best regards to you. He feels much the influence of the *good* people of New England, though a Unitarian in sentiment.

A more important topic of your letter is annexation. Now I say to you in great confidence, that the King with the full consent of the Prince, his high chiefs, Ministers, & chief Justice, & they are unanimous, has authorized his Minister of Foreign Relations, to form a treaty with Mr. Gregg, U.S. Commissioner, for the annexation of the H. Islands to the U. States, to be ratified by him or not, as he shall see fit. Not that the King is prepared at present to annex; for so far as I know

his mind & that of the Chiefs, Ministers & all concerned, it is to maintain his independence as long as it is safe. But the King is conscious of his weakness: & no sensible man can be here, & not be conscious of it. He remembers the Latt, & his object now is to provide against an immergency, which may arise at any time. Should attempt be made at revolution, or should fillibusters get the upper hand, he wishes to have an "anchor to windward", & in a moment can run up the American flag.

This is all a secret here yet known only to the Chiefs & high officers, & a few perhaps in their confidence; & knowing your regard for the welfare of the Hawaiian race, & your abundant labors for them, I think it due to you to state the above, knowing that you will make no imprudent use of it. The treaty will stipulate for securing to all Hawaiians the rights of citizens of the U. States, provide $300.000 to be paid annually in annuities to the King & Chiefs — a provision for schools & so on. This last is a matter of great importance; for what the remnant of the race will be, will depend upon their education. I shall aim at having not less than $100.000 a year for the support

of schools for a series of years, say 20, or 30.

Annexation may not after all take place, at any rate for some time; but the present state of things, presents a strong motive to urge on the work of teaching English to natives. The white race increases, & natives who can not use the English language, will suffer a great disadvantage, in every respect. Their social position will be unfavorable, & in regard to business not less so. We are therefore trying to get an act through the Legislature for the support of an English school in each of the 22 election districts, to be sustained in part by parents & in part by government. If it passes, then the question will be where to get teachers. I think females can be employed to a great extent in the work; they will be more patient than males in teaching native children, & to succeed well, they must begin with the children, & will cost less than male teachers. The greatest difficulty will be to find places for them to board in the remote districts. To select tea

-chers for these schools should they be estab-
lished will be a very important matter.
Every one of them ought to be to all intents
& purposes a missionary, sent not only
to teach natives English, but to do them
good, to elevate & save them. I may have
occasion therefore to address you again
on this subject, & ask your council &
aid. It has occured to me, that if provision
can be made here to employ some 15 or 20,
teachers, it might be best for me to go
to the States, & select them in person.
This however is only a thought.

I regret to say that intemperance
is rather increasing than otherwise among
the chiefs. The King keeps sober but a small
portion of the time, & John Young's habits
are now fast becoming as bad as those
of the King. The young princes too in-
dulge a good deal, & entice others around
them. All this tends to destroy confidence
in the government, weaken it, & prepare
the way for a change of some kind.
But they will not hear, & must take
the consequences. When troublous times
come on, intemperate men are the last
in the world to guide public affairs.
I speak from experience — sad experience.

All my anxiety to do the best that can be done in the circumstances, for a race to whose welfare, I have consecrated my life. May God guide us aright & whatever may come of the government, make himself glorious on these Islands, until the end of time.

The case of Mr. Dwight is a most painful one. He is strange creature; seems to be bewitched with the idea that he must elevate the Hawaiian females, by lowering himself below them. It is a lesson, not to send single men often on foreign missions.

So war is declared, as we heard yesterday & the potsherds of the earth are dashing against one another. It is awful to think of, but I have this thought, that God has a controversy with those old nations of Europe. They have desecrated his holy Sabbaths; some of their governments have dishonored his word, & put it under a bushel, & encouraged & supported another gospel, which is no gospel; & will he not now correct some of these evils by the rod of his anger? Will not good come out of this tremendous evil? I think it will & cannot but rejoice in the thought.

We have just had a Russian frigate

& a British ship of war here. Both left last week. Had they remained a few days longer, we might have had some fighting near at hand. The English officers, I understood, though having a smaller armament, were anxious to go into it.

Our Legislature makes a good deal of noise, but does little this year. A. G. Thurston, son of a pioneer missionary, you will observe, is Speaker of the House of Representatives!

You wish for evidence as to the extent of prostitution in & out of the church. The pastors can speak more satisfactorily than I on this subject. But this I will say: it is still the great sin of the land, in & out of the church; yet it does not prevail in the church in my opinion, to the extent that is commonly represented, nor to the extent that might be expected, considering the habits of the people. The best way to get at the truth, would be for pastors to collect statistics from their church records.

Please hasten on the maps with all speed.

Mrs Armstrong is in very poor health & is not at home.

The Miss Chamberlains & Miss Clark who were with you, have improved much & I think will engage in teaching. Anne Eliza will teach in the Royal school next term.

As ever most truly Yours,

R. Armstrong.

Rev R. Armstrong. Honolulu, June 3, 1854. Rec'd July 25. Ans'd June 13

127

Honolulu, Aug. 21. 1854.

Sir;

I have to acknowledge the receipt of Dr. Anderson's letter of June 13th, which has been submitted to the Trustees of the Punahou School, & carefully considered by them. Dr. Anderson says, the man he had in view for the Presidency of the "Oahu College", will not be able to come. This the Trustees regret, & it has led them to look around here for some one suitable to fill the place. A formal application was therefore made, last week to Mr. Edward G. Beckwith, the Principal of the "Royal School" in this place, to become "President of the Oahu College"; & as Mr. B. consents to take the matter into favorable consideration, I am instructed by the Trustees to say, that if a person intended for this place, shall not have embarked for the Islands, before this comes to hand, let him not embark, until you hear from

us again, in regard to this matter. I shall write you by next mail, when I hope it will be clear whether Mr. Beck -will accept or not. The prospect is that he will accept, & as he has gained a high reputation here as a practical teacher, his election will give general satisfaction to the friends of the institution.

With the spirit of Dr. Andersons letter in regard to our anticipated College, the Trustees are well pleased, & we hope with such co-operation in our father lands, to build up in due time, with God's blessing, an institution such as the Islands & the times demand.

Very respectfully & truly
Yours,
R. Armstrong.
Sec.y of Board of Trustees.

Rev. Sela B. Treat.
Miss. House, Boston.

Rev. R. Armstrong —

Honolulu Aug. 21. 1854.

Rec^d Oct. 28.

Ack^d June 13/55.

Mr. Beckwith President

Honolulu Sept. 1854

My Dear Sir:

(I wrote to you Aug. 21 that the trustees of "Oahu College" had given a call to E. G. Beckwith late principal of the "Royal School" to become president of that Institution & that he had the subject under consideration.) I wrote you before the question was decided in order to arrest for the time being any further proceedings on your part in procuring and sending out a President from the states until you heard from us again on the subject. I have now to state that Mr. Beckwith has accepted the invitation and has already moved into the Institution. He will commence his labors next week. You will see a notice of his appointment and the prospectus of the College in the Polynesian of last week and also in the "Friend" of last friday, which see.

The appointment seems to give general satisfaction. What will now be wanted is funds to support the college, procure a library, endow one or two professorships &c. If we would be successful in the undertaking we must have the Institution so endowed as to make instruction therein, and living, cheap. At best everything here is expensive. The trustees are much in earnest now and from the tone of Dr. Anderson's (I suppose he is now on his way to India) letter we have no doubt but that the prudential committee will take speedy measures to procure some endowment for the Institution.

I will only add that I have applied to Dr. Davis of Westfield

Massachusetts to select and send out another teacher for our Royal School which for the present will be taught by Miss Ann Eliza Clark and Miss Martha Ann Chamberlain. It is possible that Mr. Morris Beckwith elder brother of the late principal will be the one selected.
I have requested Mr. Hill in a note to Dr. Davis to advance the person chosen one half years salary ($750.00) to enable him to get to the Islands, should he call for it.

Our present circumstances and future prospects at the Islands demand & loudly call for vigorous action to build up our literary Institutions on Christian principles. Should a change of government take place it will be of great advantage to have these institutions in vigorous operation beforehand.

Very respectfully & truly,
Your obt. Servant,

R. Armstrong,
Sec. of Board of Trustees.

Rev. Selah B. Treat.
Misy. House, Boston.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu Sep. 1854

Rec^d Oct. 28.

Ack'd. June 13. /55.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu, Sep. 6. 1854.
Rec'd Oct. 28.
Ans'd Dec 4

Atlas

Honolulu,
Sep. 6. 1854.

My dear Sir;

I wish to inquire, if the Atlas I forwarded to Dr. Anderson more than a year ago, to be engraved or Cerographed in New York, is completed or what is the state of the work? Dr. A– wrote me some time ago that Mr. Morse

in New York had it in hand & it was in progress; but I have not heard from it since. Please inform me what the prospect is. Our school (native) have been suffering these three years, for want of an Atlas, & the teachers are quite out of patience waiting. If it is possible please hurry on the work, & I authorize Mr. Hill to pay the bill for corographing & any other necessary expenses of the work. I also requested Mr. Hitchcock to look after it somewhat.

Very respectfully & truly
Yours,
R. Armstrong.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

P.S. Perhaps I should still address Dr. Anderson; if so, please pardon my mistake. I suppose he is absent.

R. A.

130

Honolulu, Nov. 9. 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Miss^y House,
Boston

Dear Sir;

I wrote you a short time since, making inquiry in regard to an Atlas with Hawaiian names, forwarded by myself more than a year ago, to Dr Anderson, to be cerographed by Mr Morse of New York. Lest my note may have failed to reach you, being exceedingly pressed in our schools for want of the Atlas, I venture to repeat the inquiry. Dr Anderson being absent, you may be wholely unacquainted with the matter; but it will be found in our correspondence for the last two years. He has informed me that the work was in the hands of Mr Morse, & Mr Hitchcock agreeably to my request, had examined, & corrected some of the proofs, several months

ago; but I do not hear of the work being completed & forwarded to the Islands. We need it exceedingly. Our schools have suffered for the last two years for the want of it & if it is a thing possible & consistent with your numerous & pressing engagements I beg the favor of you, to ascertain how the matter stands & inform me without delay. I find it difficult to satisfy the natives, that I have made every reasonable effort, to have the work done, & if you will aid me in the matter, or in case you are unable to attend to it, write to N. York & employ a suitable person to do it, I will be greatly obliged, & so will the people interested in our schools here.

In regard to meeting the expense of the work, I requested Dr. Anderson to ask Mr. Hill to advance the amount necessary (I suppose from \$500 to \$700) & send the bill to Castle & Cooke. This has been our usual course. Our Legislature made an appropriation two years ago to meet the expense & the money is ready.

Had we a good Atlas I think our schools would take a new start, which they very much need.

With kind regards to the gentlemen at the Missionary House,

I remain, Sir,

Your obt. Servant.

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu Nov. 9. '54.

Rec'd. Jan. 11. 1855.

Ack'd. June 13.

ABC 19.1 v.14

131. Chapman, R. A.L. to S. B. Treat;
 20 March 1855
132. Armstrong, A.L. to R. Anderson;
 Dec. 1854
133. A.L. to S. B. Treat; 15 Jan. 1855
134. A.L. to R. Anderson; 15 June 1855
135. A.L. to R. Anderson; 7 July 1856

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

136. A.L. to R. Anderson; 2 Jan. 1856
137. A.L. to R. Anderson; 23 May 1856
138. A.L. to R. Anderson; 5 June 1856
139. A.L. to R. Anderson; 16 Oct. 1856
140. A.L. to R. Anderson; 7 Nov. 1856
141. Document, Oahu College endowment,n.
 d.

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

131

Springfield March 20. 1855.

Dear Sir -

The accompanying letter to Dr. Anderson was sent to me with a request that I would see him on his return & converse with him on the subject to which it relates. But I see no reason why Mr. Armstrong would object to its going into your hands with liberty to show it to Mr. Hubbard - For though Mr Armstrong naturally desires to keep his movements from the knowledge of the public he being a member of the new King's Cabinet, he cannot but desire that you should know his views and wishes -

I therefore take the liberty to send it to you, requesting you to do what may be in your power towards securing the peace of the Islands.

I shall reply to Mr. Armstrong, stating what I have done & informing him that I understand the present basis of our govt. to be adverse to annexation, & advising that if any filibustering go there from California the govt. take them & punish them. My impression is that the government would do well to start a system of self protection.

Permit me to add that though I have not had the pleasure to be in Boston since your Club did me the honor to elect me an honorary member, I hold the club in very affectionate remembrance, & consider the honor of the election more valuable than any political election would be in these times.

Yours truly

R H Chapman

Rev L B Treat

R. A. Chapman
Springfield Mar. 20. '55.
Rec'd. March 22.
Ack'd March 27

(Private & confidential.)

(Honolulu, Dec. 1854)

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss^y House, Boston)

My dear Sir;

The papers will inform you in detail of the interesting & exciting events that have transpired here within a few days past, but I wish to say a few words to your private ear.

Our late King K. III. was greatly & justly beloved by his people & they as is natural deeply mourn his departure. He was good to his people & to foreigners, especially to missionaries, who ever enjoyed his confidence & favor & received many benefits from him. When he came to the throne his people were mere serfs, without property & without political rights; without education or civilization. He has left them a nation of free holders, nearly all possessing more or less property, & living under the protection of a liberal constitution, & laws they themselves have sanctioned by their representatives. In fact, from an absolute despotism aggra

vated by all the evils of a barbarous State, K. III. saw his people arise to a State of intelligence, order, freedom, & Christian civilization, perhaps never before witnessed in the same number of years among a people similarly situated. No wonder then, that at his death his people, all of us, are disposed to forget his personal faults (greatly to be deplored) & mourn for him, as for a father. I knew him personally for 22 years & have been in his service more than seven & 1/2 months, & I never saw a better hearted man. He bore no ill will to any one, & had the ill will of none. Possessed of a clear & vigorous mind & kind heart, he was quick to discern & ever ready to acquiesce in measures for the good of his people & of foreigners in his dominions of whom he never seemed to be at all jealous. One thing also was remarkable in the King; while his personal habits were extremely bad, he was ever ready to acknowledge the authority of Jehovah the true God, reverence his word, & favor his professing people. He even proclaimed in public on one occasion when but a youth, that

"Gods people should be his people", & time proved, that this was not a mere flourish of rhetoric. In short, he was a good king to every one but himself.

With his young Majesty K. IV, you have a slight personal acquaintance, which I am glad of, as you will feel the deeper interest in his administrations. He is not yet 21 years of age, but possesses a clear vigorous & intelligent mind, & has shown himself fully capable of governing, with honor to himself & good to his people. On last Sabbath, the first of His Majesty's reign we were all pleased, to see him collect his ministers, Chief Justice, sister, & other members of his family around him & go to the house of God, where an appropriate sermon was delivered by Mr. Clark. This was a step in the right direction & is a good omen for the future. His Majesty having been eleven years in the Royal school, is well instructed in the truths of Christianity, & I shall be greatly disappointed if he does not do much to aid the cause of morals & religion among his people. He had a pious mother whose

prayers may not be forgotten.

You will no doubt wish to know what effect the accession of K. IV. will have on the question of annexation. On this I can only express my own opinion & I think it is not far from correctness. Neither the late King, nor his successor, nor the Kings advisors, ever favored annexation, except as a means of meeting an emergency, that might cause the overthrow of his government, & the downfall of his dynasty. Nor will they in future. The King & Chiefs are the natural, & rightful rulers of these Islands, & they naturally desire to maintain their government as long as they can, & in this they should be encouraged & supported. For if an independent government here can be strong & efficient, it is better for the natives by far than annexation. We all feel so. But if in the Providence of God an emergency should arise, I believe his Young Majesty will be the first to move for annexation. Of this there appears to be no prospect at present, since lately the Representatives of the three great powers, England, France & the U. States, residing here, have pledged ~~the~~ aid of their naval forces at all times, to maintain ~~sustain~~ the Kings government, in case of necessity, owing to fillibusters, internal revolution, ~~or~~ any other cause.

of their respective governments support them in this pledge, it may entirely allay all fears of danger, & of course remove any necessity for annexation.

But as our danger is from the Goths & Vandals of California, what is wanted is a strong & solemn determination on the part of the government at Washington, to save the American name & nation from the shame & disgrace, that such people would bring upon them by doing mischief here, impelled by motives the most selfish, sordid, & corrupt. I wish too that the President would issue the most stringent & imperative orders to his diplomatic agents, & all naval officers here, to use every means to discountenance & crush every attempt on the part of their countrymen here to embarrass or disturb the King's government, with a view to bring about annexation. I assure you such orders are needed, & if the President knew just how matters have gone of late, I believe he would issue them promptly.

Too weak.

What a shame, that from the land that has sent forth the most good to

this inoffensive & interesting people; sent them the Gospel & a Christian civilization, should now come forth troops of unprincipled villains, to scatter "firebrands, arrows, & death," & attempt to wrest the Islands from their rightful rulers? The Christian people of the U. States who have spent their million of dollars here, & sent here their sons & daughters to bless & not curse the people, should arise & forbid it. Let them ask the President to protect K. IV (once a Royal pupil of two worthies from N. England & his people) from the hordes of California ruffians, who come here to bring about annexation by their revolvers & bowie knives. Now is a good time, for the Christian people of N. England to exert an influence at Washington, As our interesting young sovereign has just come to the throne, let him see, that he has the warm sympathies & support of the good people there, of whom he has more than once spoken to me, with confidence & pleasure, & that if he ever alienates his sovereignty, it will not be because the revolver is at his ear, but from a necessity beyond human control.

I say these things to you, my dear sir, confidentially of course, but with the hope & design that you will use them in the right direction, & for the good of a people who have had an interest in your prayers & labors for more than twenty five years.

Very truly yours,
R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu Dec. 1854

Rec'd. March 22. 1855.

Ans'd April 17

P.C.

Honolulu, Jan. 15, 1855.

Rev. S. B. Treat;

Dear Sir;

I am directed by the Trustees of Oahu College, to state to the Prudential Committee, that although the appropriation of $3,000 for the erection of a dwelling for the President of the Institution, has not been drawn for, up to the present time, the Trustees believe it will soon be needed; it may be on the arrival of the secular man & family, you speak of sending; & therefore, it is the desire of the Trustees, that said appropriation be continued, at any rate for some time to come, to be called for by the Trustees when needed. On the arrival of the secular man, what new accommodations may be needed, will be more clearly known, & the Committee will be informed accordingly.

Very truly Yours,

R. Armstrong,
Sec. Board of Trustees.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu Jan. 15. 1855.

Rec'd. March 16.

Ans. April 17

P.C.

(confidential) 134

Honolulu, June 15, 1855,

Rev R. Anderson D. D.

Dear Brother;

You will probably hear from others of what has lately transpired at Punahou — & I will not now attempt to go much into the details of late transactions in the Board of Trustees of Oahu College. I have not time for it just now, as our Legislature is about closing & I expect to be in the House of Nobles all night. Suffice it to say for the present that there has been more or less dissatisfaction with Mr Dole as a teacher during past years. He is a good man & much esteemed as a christian, a scholar & a writer, but as a teacher he fails to interest his pupils, gain their affections & confidence, & especially those who are rather dull. This has been increasing since more popular teachers have been in his vacinity; & lately parents & children or youth have to a considerable extent become dissatisfied with his

teaching, & all the more advanced Latin & Greek scholars have declared their unwillingness to pursue a college course under him, or some of them even fit for college. It was on this account that Mr Beckwith, when first applied to, to take the presidency, decidedly refused at first, but was persuaded to make a trial, with the hope that Mr D. when confined mostly to instructing in the languages, would give satisfaction; but after a trial of two terms, Mr B. was satisfied that, with such a state of feeling in regard to the Prof. of languages, he could never build up a college, & signified to the Trustees, his intention to resign at the close of the ~~his~~ official year in September; but consented to hold on a year longer. Some of the Trustees were & always have been satisfied with Mr Doles teaching & wished no change, but a majority, six out of nine, at one of our meetings, expressed the opinion that it would be well, if Mr D. could remove from the institution, in the course of a year or so. This was not communicated

to him officially, but he heard of it, & forthwith resigned. It is proper to say however, that nothing but the most kind feelings have been exhibited towards Mr & Mrs Dole. It is only as a teacher, that he is found fault with.

What he will do I know not. Not having learned the native language & being too old now to learn it, makes it difficult for him to find a suitable field of labor at the Islands. He talks, I understand, of going to Koloa, on Kauai, to engage in teaching a small English school, & preaching to a few foreigners in the vicinity; but this will involve the necessity of his building a dwelling house, & his sphere of labor must be small. It has occurred to some of us here that there might be a good opening for him at the Miss. House, in his brothers place, whose health we learn has failed. This of course is only a suggestion, made in entire ignorance of the state of your affairs, & will go for what it is worth. Mr D. is a chaste, clear & good writer, & some of us here think would make a good editor of a religious journal. If such an arrangement could be made, it had better be done soon, before he goes on to build or to enter any permanent engagement here. Indeed I do not

see now, what suitable opening there is now for him here at present. True we want the native taught English, but *as a teacher*, I do not think he is well adapted. But the Lord will direct so good a man, & provide a place for him to labor somewhere. It is a trial, a severe one for Mr & Mrs S. to leave Punahou, & I sympathise with them; but I am one of those who do not regard that brother as adapted to build up the institution. With all our efforts *united*, it will be a long & difficult work to build up even a small college here; with divisions & dissatisfaction it is impossible.

I shall write you soon officially in regard to raising funds for the college. It is time we were in earnest, in attempting to secure them. We shall, I think, be able to do something here quite equal to our ability.

I hope, dear Brother, this will find you safely at home at your post, & in the bosom of your family.

I remain, as ever,

Truly Yours,

R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu June 15. 1855.
Rec'd Aug. 13.

(1) 135

Honolulu Sand. Islands
July 7th 1855.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Sir

In my capacity as Secretary of the Board of Trustees of Oahu College, I am directed by that body to call the attention of the Prudential Committee to the pecuniary wants of our infant Institution.

Before entering upon this topic however, it may be well to state, that a change has lately taken place in the faculty. On the 7th of June last, for reasons which Mr. Dole will doubtless explain to you, he resigned his connexion with ~~with~~ the College. This was accepted and the following resolution passed on the same day, in reference to it by the Trustees.

"Resolved, that in accepting the resignation of Bro. Dole, we beg to assure him of our undiminished esteem and sincere christian affection, and our grateful sense of the earnestness, zeal and fidelity, with which for fourteen years past, he has labored to promote the intellectual advancement and spiritual good of the pupils placed under his charge. We also desire to bear testimony to the untiring fidelity and kindness with which his Companion has discharged the duties which have devolved upon her, in the department, in which she has been called to labor; and our most cordial good wishes, and earnest prayer for Gods blessing

will accompany our brother and sister into any new sphere of labor upon which they may enter"

The Professorship vacated by the resignation of Mr. Dole, was at once offered to G. E. Beckwith, younger brother of the President, who has formerly been his assistant in the Royal School, where he taught the languages with great acceptance to his pupils and the patrons of the school. Mr. B. has signified his acceptance, and will be prepared to enter upon his duties at the Commencement of next term.

Mrs. Kinney is also located in the school, to take charge of a primary department, and also to have a care over the juvenile boarders in the establishment.

Should Mr. and Mrs. Spooner, now, as we are glad to hear, on their way to the Islands, prove to be well adapted to the place, as we have every reason to believe they will, the institution may be regarded as well manned and officered for the present.

The number of pupils in the preparatory department has varied during the last year from 45 to 50 and will probably be a little increased during the coming year. In the first Class in the languages there are 7 — and a part of these can be prepared to enter upon a regular College course in a year from this time, if they remain. Another class in the languages will require a longer time to prepare for entering upon a College course.

You will notice that no Class has as yet entered upon a college course. But we are coming to that point, I hope very soon, and when once com-

menced, there is reason to hope that a new class, however small, will be formed every year.

The subject that now presses itself upon the minds of the Trustees most heavily, is that of funds, and it is on this subject that I am directed to write you particularly.

At a late meeting of the Trustees, the following preamble and resolutions were adopted, which will explain themselves.

"Whereas, the want of a College or some literary institution equivalent thereto, has long been felt by the friends of education on the Islands, that our Youth who aspire to a liberal education, may be enabled to acquire it here, and be saved the necessity of seeking it in other countries far distant; And Whereas, the number of such youth is increasing, and may be expected to increase, more and more, from year to year; And whereas in order to found a College, a charter has been obtained from the Hawaiian Government, a responsible Board of Trustees has been constituted, a faculty appointed, buildings sufficient for the present have been erected at Punahou a place admirably adapted for such an institution, and about 400 acres of land adjacent thereto have been obtained; And Whereas an annual income of not less than $6000, is needed to meet the expenses of such an institution, to pay the salaries of professors and teachers, to keep in repair the existing buildings, procure a library and meet such incidental expenses as may occur; and Whereas, the Board of Trustees can see no adequate means of raising such an amount annually, unless a considerable permanent fund can be secured for the

institution, such as will enable the Trustees so to reduce the expenses of the students, as to bring the advantages of the institution within the reach of those possessing but moderate means, and these constitute a large majority of the youth on the Islands seeking or likely to seek a liberal Education, — Therefore be it

Resolved 1, That this Board of Trustees make an immediate and earnest effort to raise a sum of not less than $50,000, within the shortest possible time, to be put at interest as a permanent fund for the support of Oahu College.

Resolved 2, That having been encouraged by the American Board to expect aid in this enterprise from them, an appeal be made forthwith to said Board in behalf of the College, and to the Christian public in the United States through them.

Resolved 3, That, having full confidence in the intelligence, liberality and zeal of His Majesty and his Government, in relation to the cause of education on the Islands, as evinced in the history of his Government for the last thirty years; and believing that the success will be an important means of elevating the character and promoting the general wellfare of His Majesty's subjects, and of advancing the prosperity and honor of his reign, this Board beg respectfully lay before His Majesty's Government the pecuniary wants of our infant institution, and request a favorable consideration of the same,

Resolved 4, That the Secretary be directed to

forward to the American Board a copy of the above preamble and resolutions with a letter of explainations, and that a Committee of two be appointed to wait on His Majesty's Board of Education with the same and make such explainations as may be required."

Fifty thousand dollars is a small sum for the endowment of a College; but the Trustees prefer to ask for too little rather than too much for the present; and as the necessities of the College may demand the way will be open, to seek more funds.

The Committee of the Trustees, Messrs. Beckwith and Castle, appointed to wait on the Board of Education, in accordance with one of the above resolutions, attended to that duty yesterday. They had a free, full and very friendly and satisfactory conversation with Board in relation to Oahu College.
It may be necessary to state here, that a change has been made in the Department of Education by a late Act of the Legislature, proposed by myself, by which the entire management of the Department is committed to a Board of Education composed of a President and two Directors; and it has pleased His Majesty to appoint Mr. Allen Min. of Finance and Prince Lot Kamehameha the King's brother, with both of whom you are acquainted, to the latter offices, and myself to the former.

I am happy to state to you, that my associates were no less ready than myself, to entertain favorably the proposition of the Trustees. Although

the Government is poor and hard pressed for means to carry on its necessary operations, and although it already expends about the one seventh of its entire revenue for Education, the following minute was at once adopted by the Board, and has the sanction of the King, who in fact came in while the matter was under discussion, and signified his entire approbation of the action of the Board, and the great interest he felt in the institution. The record is as follows—

"Office of Public Instruction, Honolulu July 6. 1853.
The Board of Education met at 11 O'clock A. M. on the subject of the application of the Trustees of Oahu College for aid to that institution, and adopted the following minute."

"Whereas a document has been this day presented to this Board, containing a preamble and certain resolutions adopted by the Trustees of Oahu College, relating to the condition and pecuniary wants of that institution; proposing to raise a sum of not less than $50,000, as a permanent fund for its support; and respectfully requesting His Majesty's Government to aid them in raising the above amount; and Whereas in the opinion of this Board, the prosperity of that College, as it is intended to be open to all youth of every class and color, who may possess the requisite qualifications to enter it and aspire to a liberal education, will have a direct and immediate connexion with cause of education generally among His Majesty's subjects; and if properly conducted, cannot fail to add greatly to the prosperity and honor of His Majesty's Government.

"Therefore, this Board proposes, subject to His Majesty's approval, to grant to Oahu College, out of the land appropriated to educational purposes, an amount equal to the sum of + $10,000, in value, on the following conditions.

1st That His Majesty shall have the right to appoint two members of the Board of Trustees, subject to the provisions of Article 3d of the Charter

2d That the sum of at least $50,000 including the above $10,000 shall be raised for the object aforesaid within three years from this date.

Jany 6 1858

3d The institution shall be open to all classes of youth, both native and foreign, who shall be able to pass the regular examinations required by the rules of the institution, and maintain a good moral character.

In view of the aforesaid conditional grant of $10000, this Board hereby designates and sets apart the land called Hamakuapoko on the Island of Maui, now by law at its disposal, to be reserved for the purpose of raising the amount; or if sold, the avails are to be kept for the same object; and in case they shall not be sufficient the full amount shall be made up out of the avails of other lands, set apart for educational purposes."

In relation to granting to the King the power to appoint two Trustees out of the twelve, we feel that you need not hesitate, it is reasonable that he have some voice in the management of the institution, in

view of such a grant, and having two trustees in the Board, will tend to allay all suspicion and create confidence on the part of the Government, and should the Government be able at any future time, and the institution be in need of funds, we shall be much more likely to get another grant, if the King is represented in the Board of Trustees, than if he is not.

The Charter provides that the Board of Trustees shall fill all vacancies, subject to the approval of the American Board: and in order to comply with the condition refered to, it will be necessary that both the American Board and the Board of Trustees agree, and give the King a pledge that they will elect any two Trustees he will appoint at the proper time, otherwise the Charter will need to be altered.

The Trustees have thought it might facilitate the collection of funds, were they contributed by those, at least who prefer it, in the form of ~~Fellowships~~ scholarships, and hence I enclose a report on that subject. You will be the best judges of of the propriety of this.

July 11th Since writing the above the King has consented to exercise the right of appointing two Trustees subject to the approval of the American Board, so that one paragraph above is uncalled for. I think it will be a decided advantage to allow the King a voice in the management in of the institution, and as far as it is safe to do so.

Something may be expected in the way of private donations, or scholarships here; perhaps to the amount

of from $2000. to $5000.; but the money market is very tight now, and it is not a suitable time to make the effort. It will be made in due time however.

While writing the above, His Majesty has stepped into my office and handed me the note of which I enclose copy. You will be pleased to see it. Having a lame hand, his signature is not so distinct as usual. He also handed me a resolution of the Cabinet of which I enclose a copy, and which is as follows;

"Resolved, that the King and Cabinet, having considered the Minutes of the "Board of Education" of the 6th inst. approve of the application of ten thousand dollars to be raised from the lands appropriated for schools, to the Punahou College, as part of the fifty thousand dollars which the Trustees propose to raise within three years, provided always that the said Trustees duly fulfill the stipulations they make on their part."

We hope this communication will reach you before the meeting of the Board in September; and that we shall hear of your good success in securing aid for our little College.

Most respectfully and truly
Your Obt. Servant
R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu July 7. /55.

Rec'd. Sept. 11.

Ackd. Dec. 14. '55

P.C. Funds for Oahu College.

Grant of Govt.

Prud. Com.

At only two of the Stations did I notice any thing particularly discouraging, these were Molokai & Wailuku. At both of these places, there is not that state of feeling between the pastors, & their flocks, that is essential to progress & prosperity, & far from it. At Wailuku, that lovely place, & equally interesting people formerly, especially is there a bad state of things, & the church is far from prospering

Honolulu. Jan. 2. 1856.

To R. Anderson D. D.
Miss. House, Boston

My dear Brother;

I have been looking at the papers for some time, with great interest, to see a notice of your return to your native land, from the East, & I hope I shall not look in vain much longer, for I wish to talk with you, as formerly on matters connected with our great work at the Islands.

That which lies with most weight on my mind now is our little College. Every thing now looks favorable. A small Class can enter on a college course, this year, & other & finer classes are coming on, for future years. The school is full, the teachers well liked, & our youth begin to feel reconciled to get their education here, instead of going to the States. There has been a most favorable change in that respect, among both parents & pupils. But what are we do for funds? How shall they be raised? By the recent joint letter of Mr. Castle & myself, you will

see how we stand in regard to funds, & what we shall want to carry on the institution. The amount is considerable but I do not see how we can get along with less. I do hope the Board will keep the institution along, until a <u>permanent</u> fund can be raised, & that means may be taken to raise the $40.000. so as to secure the $10.000, conditionally promised by the government here. I am not without hopes, that were the $50.000 contemplated raised, we can get another grant from the government here. The King's brother Lot Kamehameha, & Mr. Allen (a most liberal minded man) being my associates in the Board of education, & having entire control of the school lands, & the school fund of the government, I am in a very favorable situation to advance the interests of the college. But $10.000 is as much as it is prudent to ask for at present.

We wait with some solicitude to know what prospect there is of securing more aid from you, both to meet <u>present</u> wants, & to raise a permanent fund; for every thing of this kind affects the minds of our young men, & also of our teachers. So long as there is any uncer

tainty as to funds, the minds of both will be in a measure, unsettled.

It is possible that you may make use of one or other or both of the brethren who are about to visit you, & both of them are Trustees of the College, I mean, Clark & Baldwin, to raise funds, tho. neither of them are very good at public address. In private, they will both do well. If an agent must be sent from here, the most suitable one I can think of, would be Pres. Beckwith himself. He is young, ardent, discreet, & a fair speaker in public. But nothing short of absolute necessity, should take him from his post, even for a season. A word from you in regard to funds for the college will be gratefully received.

You may be aware that there has been some dissatisfaction in the mission, on account of Mr. Dole's removal from Punahou, & it is possible some things may be written to the Pru. Committee, that may affect their minds & their action in relation to the College. If so I suggest that no action whatever of the Committee, be predicated on such statements, without giving the Trustees opportunity to explain their course of conduct. I think they can show good

and satisfactory reasons for what they did.

During the year 1855, just closed, I visited all the Islands, & every missionary station, in the course of my official duty, & had good opportunities for seeing how the brethren conduct the affairs of their respective stations, & the success that has crowned their labors. I found them all at their posts, hard at work, watching for souls, & promoting the welfare of their people in various ways. As a class they are very laborious & self denying, & the advancement of their people in knowledge, industry, civilization & religion, is the best evidence of their success. I have lived for weeks on weeks among the natives, lodging with them in their huts, partaking of their homely fare, & sleeping on their mats, & the more I see of them, the more I bless God for what he has done for them. I do not believe there is a community on earth of the same number, more entirely pervaded by the blessed Gospel. In the remotest corners of the land, I find a Bible & a hymn book, in every house, if there is nothing else.

I visited very nearly every school in the land, during the year, & feel encouraged on the whole with the progress of education. It was never more encouraging than now. We have 17 English schools for native children exclusively, in successful operation, & we could have more, if we could find suitable teachers. Hawaiians will have the English language. Please don't fail to send me your report of your visit to Asia.

Very truly & affly yours, R. Armstrong.

R. Armstrong
Honolulu, Jan. 2. 1856
Recd. April 16. 1856

137

Honolulu, May 23, 1856.

To R. Anderson D.D.
Miss. House.
Boston;

Dear Brother;

I am happy to see by the papers that you are at your post again, in Boston; I beg to congratulate you on your safe return. I am watching with intense interest the discussion, that has been going on, in reference to your proceedings in the east, but I am not yet sufficiently enlightened to have such an opinion about it. The adorable Head of the Church, will I doubt not, guide you all, to a proper result.

But I sat down to say a word more in regard to our little college. Excuse me, for writing you so often in regard to it; but the fact is we are in a strait. Your grant for paying the salary of the President for two years, will be exhausted in two or three months & unless, in the mean time, you make

us a grant to keep the institution along until there is time to secure an endowment, so far as I see, we shall be compelled to close its doors, dismiss our professors, & be worse off even than before we attempted to have a college at all." The patrons of the school, are almost entirely missionaries & ex-missionaries, & cannot do more than they now do, towards supporting the college; at least not much more; & beyond the mission circle, no immediate help can be obtained, though, I think, over & above the $10.000 pledged by government, we shall get something more here towards the permanent endowment. We shall try. The institution is rising in public estimation. The late examination was most satisfactory, & its patrons think, ask for no better college, than this, if can be carried on. We hear no more talk among our young people of going to the U. States to college; in fact, the Rev. Mr Speer, Chinese missionary, from California, now here on a visit, & was one of the committee on examination, thinks it very likely students will come to us from California. But we want help just now. In the joint letter of Mr Castle & myself of

December last, I think, you will see a full statement of the income & wants of the College & what grant will be needed, to keep us along for a season.

As to the fund of $50,000, Messrs Clark & Baldwin may render some aid in getting it; but I doubt whether either of them is just the man to go about among your wealthy people & solicit. Now, Mr Allen, our minister of finance, with whom you are acquainted, who is well & favorably known in Boston, & N. England, is about making you a visit, & I suggest that he be our agent, as well as Clark & Baldwin, to seek funds for our College. Mr Allen is also associated with Prince Lot Kamehameha & myself on the Board of education, & is much interested in the cause of education out here. He is, as you know a man of good address, & could no doubt approach, men of means, that a miss= could not. He is a graduate of "Williams" & thinks of trying to be at their great missionary gathering there, where he might make an appeal for our College. Our professors, the Beckwiths are both sons of "Williams", an appeal there might have the more force, on that account. The missionary brethren are now here & before Mr Allen leaves I shall bring this manao before the trustees of Oahu College, & try to have him duly authorized. He may leave in

about two weeks; & arrive there about August. He consents to do what he can.

Should we be obliged to suspend the College, I think both the Beckwiths would be obliged to leave at once & return to N. England, as they are poor men & I do not see where they could get employment here to suit them. In that case we should find it difficult to resuscitate the institution. What we immediately crave therefore, is the means of sustaining the College, until our permanent fund can be raised. The $10.000 on the part of the government is ready, & I hope by private subscription to increase it somewhat, but money is scarce now, & this is not the time to make the effort.

The General Meeting is in session & the painful case of Messrs Conde & Bailey is just coming up, of wh. you will hear. If you could in any way get Mr Conde away from the Islands, in my view, you would confer a great blessing on our bleeding Zion. Talk with Mr. Clark about this.

I shall be glad once more to receive a line from you, when convenient for you to write.

May our Heavenly Father long preserve you to serve his church on earth & at last crown you with life everlasting.

Ever your Bro. in the Lord,

R. Armstrong.

P.S. I. W. Austin Esq. our Dis. Attorney for Maui, a Charlestown man leaves to-day for Boston & will call & give you his views of Oahu College. He is a fine young man, &c, & a Unitarian.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu May 23, 1856.
Rec'd July 15.

Honolulu, June 5, 1856.

R. Anderson D. D.
Miss. House,
Boston.

Dear Brother;

Oahu College again! pardon my writing so often in regard to it; but it is a dear object to us here, who have sons & daughters of our own, & a nation, yet many nations, in this wide Pacific, to educate, & it has come to a crisis for want of funds. As intimated in my last, Mr. Allen is authorized by the Trustees to make an effort, while in the States, to collect funds toward a permanent endowment, & he has kindly consented to do what he can. With your co-operation, & that of his numerous & influential friends, I have great

hopes of success. Do if possible sense us the necessity of sending a special agent to do this business.

Mr. Allen is a man of handsome property here & should he need funds on his own account while there, Mr. Gordon will be safe in letting him have what he may wish. In fact, I will be responsable for its payment, to the amount of, say $500. ; but I dont think it likely he will call for any, unless it may be on account of traveling or something else for our College. Mr. Allen stands high here as a man of probity & honor; & feels much interest in the subject of education. I have no doubt but that you will co-operate with him harmoniously in the matter of collecting funds. If this effort should fail, which God forbid, please inform us as soon as convenient, of the fact, & what you think should be done next; for there is no time to be lost. Your long absence from Boston, has

operated to our disadvantage, as nothing has been done, until your return.

There is one thing which embarrasses us in supporting the institution, viz. the salaries of the missionaries were fixed on the old custom of paying only $2. a week for the boarding, tuition, &c, of their children at Punahou; but this does not cover the cost, by $1. a week each, at least; perhaps $1.50 a week. The deficiency of course has been made up out of the funds of the Board, & so far as I see, it must be still, unless the miss.s have their salaries raised. True, one or two of them, have means sufficient to pay all the board costs, but it is evident that nearly all of them have not, & if obliged to, they must keep their children at home. The matter has been fully talked over in the association, & no other conclusion arrived at.

The vast field for miss.y operations on the Islands to the westward of us, lately visited by Dr. Pearson, greatly enhances the importance of our college,

& the late revival in the institution during last term, inspires the hope, that some of its sons & daughters will have the heart to engage in the missy work.

At a meeting of the Board of Trustees of Oahu College, last week, the Hon. W. L. Lee, L. L. D. Chancellor of the kingdom & judge of the Supreme court, was duly elected a Trustee, in the place of Rev. H. R. Hitchcock deceased. Please inform me, if this election meets the approbation of the Board, as provided in the Charter. I need say nothing of Judge Lee, as a man, or a public officer; you know him already.

With Christian & fraternal esteem,

I remain as ever yours,

R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu June 5th 1856.
Rec'd. July 28.
[illegible] Sep. 3.

Honolulu, Oct. 16. 1856.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Missy. House,
Boston,

Recd. R. Armstrong
Honolulu Oct. 16. 1856.
Recd. Dec. 15. 1856

Dear Brother;

I beg to add a few words, in addition to the enclosed. Your letters of July 16th & 23d are received, & have been submitted to the Trustees of the college. They have afforded us much satisfaction & encouragement in this to us new & difficult undertaking.

Yes, in a moment of despondency, all wrong of course, I did indulge the thought that, in the midst of your cares, & the great objects that occupy your mind, the opposition you are called to encounter in regard to your mission to India, our far off little college, might be left to take care of itself, at least for a season. But I stand reproved, & God grant me grace, never to distrust his kind Providence in regard to the institution again.

The trustees feel strengthened by the addition of Chief Justice Lee, who has been chosen in place of our departed Mr. Hitchcock. You have been notified of his appointment, & we hope to hear of the approval of it, by the Board. Judge Lee

is a rare man; his heart is in every good work, & no living man has so much influence as he with the King. He will do all he can for the College, tho' his health is very poor.

The general opinion of the trustees I think, is that $1200 is too small a salary for the Prof. of languages. It will not enable him to support a family comfortably as expenses are here, & no professor will long remain without this.

Your arrangement for securing a permanent fund seem to us wise. There will be much advantage in having the fund invested here, where interest is never less than 12 per cent. & both Mr. Wyllie & Prince Lot, now acting minister of finance, think the government would take the fund & give good real estate security for its payment. But this can be arranged at the proper time.

The School & College are very prosperous, & every thing promises well; but I confess the future in regard to it oppresses me some what. Pres. Beckwith & his brother already begin to wane under their labors. There are 50 scholars in the preparatory department, that must necessarily be divided into a number of classes, in the various branches of study. Besides these there is a freshman class of 4, & to teach this requires as much labor as though it were composed of 40. Next year of course there will be a freshman & sophomore class

with an increase of labor. In short there is the work of the college & academy to be performed by the two men. They have employed the more advanced pupils to do as much of the work as they can; but still it is too much; & yet we do not see how to curtail it. Unless the school is kept up with vigor, dissatisfaction is likely to occur, & a disposition to seek a college education elsewhere, which we wish to prevent. Pres. Beckwith has a great power of endurance, but his brother has not so much, tho. capable of doing a man's work in teaching. He has suffered from an infirmity of the eyes, owing to hard studies in college. But he is very popular as teacher of languages & in ordinary circumstances I think, would hold out. Still, to ask you, in the face of your timely & very pertinent caution, to "make haste slowly," I fear you will feel it to be asking a great deal, to apply now for the means of supporting another professor; & of course if Mr. B. makes you a visit next spring or summer, we must ask for the means of bearing his expenses; for we have no resources here, from which to provide for them. This I know is asking a great deal, but we do not see what else to do, unless it is to suspend the school, & wait for help. To stand by & see our present officers break down through excess of

labor in a hot climate, would be bad economy; & the Trustees are quite unanimous in the opinion, that if it meets the approbation of the Prov. Committee, Prof. Beckwith had better leave here, next spring, say, as soon as we have your approval, & spend a little time, with you in selecting another professor, the necessary books for reference, a little apparatus, visit some of your best colleges, confer with the professors &c, & return here in the fall. So please let us hear from you, as soon as may be, after the reception of this. But for your very proper caution against haste, I think the vote of the Trustees would be unanimous to send him now. Due respect, requires that we wait for your reply. He might aid you somewhat in the matter of funds, although that is in good hands; & he dislikes the idea of going about soliciting funds - Your plan is the right one - look to a few rich men.

Perhaps you are aware that the Beckwiths are very decided men; have a high standard of education, & cannot be satisfied to go on slipshod as it were with a school. They must have things somewhat ship shape or they cannot go forward. Perhaps they have too much of these traits for a new country; but they are very popular teachers & we must take them as they are. It would be hazardous to send out a professor to work with them, unless they knew him - Please let us hear from you, touching this matter soon

Very truly Yours,

R. Armstrong.

Honolulu, Nov. 1, 1856.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
For. Secy. A. B. C. F. M.
Missy. House,
Boston;

Dear Sir;

At a meeting of the Trustees of Oahu College on the 27th ult. your letter of Sep. 3d was read & the suggestions contained therein approved. The following resolutions were adopted touching the same.—

"1. Resolved, That the following gentlemen be & are hereby appointed Trustees, to receive, take charge of, and invest, any funds that may have been or hereafter may be contributed in the United States, for the endowment of Oahu College, namely

Henry Hill Esq. of Boston, Mass.
Pelatiah Perit Esq. of New York city.
Gen. William Williams, of Norwich, Conn.
Hon. Thomas W. Williams, of New London, Conn.
Henry P. Haven Esq. of ~~Charlestown, Mass.~~ New London, Ct.
James Hunnewell, Esq. of Charlestown, Mass.
William E. Dodge Esq. of New York, city.
Abner Kingman Esq. of Boston, Mass.

2. "Resolved, That the Trustees appointed by the foregoing resolution, be and are hereby authorized to fill all vacancies occuring in their own number; and that they be and are also further authorized to transfer the investment of any funds that may be received by them for the endowment of Oahu College, to the Sandwich Islands, whenever they and the Trustees of the said College concur in the opinion that this can be safely & advantageously done".

3. "Resolved, That the Secretary be & is hereby instructed to pass a copy of this days proceedings to the Chairman of the Trustees of the fund to be collected in the United States, through Dr. Anderson."

Agreeably also to your suggestion Judge Lee has drawn up the heading of a subscription for the College, which I herewith enclose in his own hand writing; but neither he nor I are sure that it is just what is wanted. You Rev. are much better acquainted

than me with such matters, & we would willingly leave this to your management.

Measures have also been taken to have the words "Punahou School and," erased from the Charter, so as to leave the name simply "Oahu College" as was the intention when the Charter was drawn, but the matter was overlooked at the proper time. As soon as I hear from the Minister of the Interior that the words refered to are stricken out I will inform you. Simply "Oahu College" is much better.

The pupils will be charged hereafter the whole cost of their boarding; indeed they have been since the commencement of the present year in August. But I apprehend, it will occasion some diminution in their number. Some of the missionary parents are unable to pay the full cost of boarding for all their children, particularly those of large families & we must look around & see what can be done to relieve such. Your suggestion of a special fund to meet such cases is a good one. Would not the children in New England, after they (God bless them) have paid for the "Morning Star", contribute a small fund for this object? If Mr Beckwith makes you a

visit, this may be one of the collateral objects of his mission.

The above I think covers all the ground suggested in your last. You will of course place in the hands of Mr. Hill, chairman of the Trustees, the foregoing resolutions.

We all, I think, appreciate your valuable council to proceed in this enterprise cautiously & deliberately, & not to indulge the idea of its failure. The desponding tone of the letters you received may not appear so strange, when it is considered, that about the time they were written, the period, during which the Board had pledged the support of the President, had expired & the Trustees had no means on hand at all to carry on the institution; nor had there been any reply to our letters asking for a continuance of your aid. This reasoning, I am aware to your long absence & the press of business on your hands after your return. But your late letters have been very satisfactory. The Board has done all that we could ask, & thus given us a solid ground to confide in them for the future, & also for trusting the institution in the hands of a kind Providence, who has raised up for it, such substantial friends.

Very respectfully & truly yours, R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu Nov. 1. 1856.
Recd. Dec. 26

We the undersigned subscribe the several sums set opposite our respective names towards a fund for the Endowment of the Oahu College in the Sandwich Islands, which funds are to be invested ~~by~~ under the direction of the Trustees of said College, and the ~~interest~~ income arising therefrom to be annually appropriated to the support of said institution. Provided always, that no portion of said subscriptions or any of the ~~interest~~ income arising therefrom, shall be used

for the promotion of any system or course of Education not in accordance with the sixth article of the present charter of ~~the~~ ~~[illegible]~~ said College -

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard
142. A.L. to R. Anderson; 18 Nov. 1856
143. A.L. to [ ]; 15 Dec. 1856
144. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 Mar. 1857
1441/2. A.L. to R. Anderson; 11 Mar. 1857
145. A.L. to R. Anderson; 3 April 1857

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

142

(Private)

Honolulu, Nov. 1. 1856.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Miss^y House,
Boston;

My dear Brother;

There are several topics on which I wish to say a word, aside from my letter of to-day in regard to the College.

From several conversations I have had with Mr Castle, I should not be surprised, if he & Mr Cooke should find it necessary or expedient to close their mercantile business, a thing I should greatly regret; but should it be so, it seems to me, Mr Castle should be retained by the Board in some way or other, as a secular agent. I do not see how we are to take care of the miss^y vessel, & how the brethren are to get along without some one here in Honolulu to look to, to attend to their business, unless their income is in some way increased. There is nothing more unsteady than the market here. An article is a drug to-day, & in great demand to-morrow; & unless there is some one here to look out for the brethren at the remote stations, they must at times suffer great inconvenience & loss. The "Morning Star"

will constitute an importa[illegible] item of business. We found it so in the case of the Missy packet.

Again, business at the Islands is far from being prosperous. Times are hard, money is scarce, & brings 25 per cent. interest, & even more. Many, if not most of our merchants are involved in debt, & many failures are expected soon. One has just occurred, that of Allen & co., son & nephew of our friend E. H. Allen, now with you in the States, & I am sorry to say he sustains a very heavy loss by the failure. The chiefs too, almost without exception are embarrassed with debt, some of them inextricably so. This state of things will account for our not doing more as a people, for Oahu College, for the support of pastors, & for the missionary cause. Abusing credit, over speculation, & lavish expenditure, have brought us down; & the government at present has not the means of paying its current expenses. But it is of the Lord. He is dealing with us in mercy; for when we have had prosperity we have forgotten him, & run riot in pleasure & sin.

I do not despair of getting something towards the endowment of Oahu College here at the Islands, besides the $10.000 grant of the government, but at present ~~the~~ ~~attempt~~ would be useless. Our foreign community is generally too

transient, too much immersed in business, or too indifferent to the cause of education & religion, to be relied upon for their substantial support. On the missionaries, ex-missionaries and their descendents, under God, rest the interests of religion & education in this far west. In this view, our little College assumes a vast importance. If we want men here in future years, to do the work of the Church & State, we must train them here. If we want to evangelize the Islands to the westward of us, we must train up the laborers here. This is clear to my mind.

You speak of teaching the English language to the natives. I am glad to see your views on the subject, & from your stand point they are natural. I agree with you entirely that pastors of churches ought not to engage in teaching English schools, & I have not hesitated to say so, to them. They have not time for it, nor strength. Yet there is this to be said of some of them, they have not engaged in these schools permanently, but only until they could find some suitable person to relieve them. Our pastors need their whole time & energy in watching over their flocks.

On my late tour of two months

I visited nearly all the English schools for natives & took great pains to watch the working of them. With two excep-tions, they are in the care of godly teach-ers of devoted piety & the scholars show the effects of it, in the order of the schools, their intelligence on religious sub-jects, & general good behaviour. As to the natives acquiring the English language, my view is, that is not a matter of choice with us. They will get it in some way. They would pick up a stray sailor, or any miserable fellow that would teach them what he called English & with it profanity, vulgarity, & drunkenness. The business of the Islands is in the hands of those who speak English & cannot & will not speak native. It is the language of trade, of law, of the court, & the natives see that unless they can use it, they are shoved aside; they stand no chance. Hence a public sentiment has arisen several years ago demanding that English be made a part of our system of schools, & the Legislature made pro-vision for the support of a few. We have now 16 in operation on the group. The danger of loosing a decided religious influence through through this change of language I confess I feel. It has given me much apprehension; those natives who have been taught in New England, have not, as a general thing turned out well.

Still I am satisfied that to have stood aloof from this effort, would have resulted in its falling into hands that would not have aided the cause of religion at all; but the contrary. Public sentiment became strong & decided, & it seemed to me, wise to take hold & direct it in the right channel; teach the native children English where it can be done, but at the same under a decidedly evangelical influence; & so far we have succeeded well in this respect. The result will be, I think, that a few will get the English language & get it well; this will be the educated class; as the educated French learn English & the Educated English learn French. But the mass will not learn it, except in a very imperfect way. I feel it to be of great importance to get good, godly teachers in this work, & I look mainly to the children of our mission. It is a good work for them.

The King has just been in my office & made me a long & pleasant call. I told him of our efforts in the States to raise a fund for Oahu College, & your acceptance of his offer &c. He remembers you perfectly, & seemed much pleased to hear of the efforts you are making for us. He will do all he

can to secure the fund if it is thought best to bring it here. He is very sensible, open hearted, frank & kind, but does not incline to serious things at all. He seldom attends church, but is always respectful towards religious people, and always admits the truth & impor-tance of religion. The Queen is a quiet, unassuming sensible little woman, but pays but little atten-tion to divine things.

In writing to us in regard to family matters of your old servants the missions, pastors teaching Eng-lish schools &c, I suggest that you do not address them to the Secy of our Hawaiian Miss. Society, but to the central or standing business committee of the mission. The rea-son is this, there are outsiders among our Missionary directors, before whom those concerned would rather not have such matters laid. They are good men, but do not view things always as we do, & do not know how to make allowances. This is merely a sugges-tion & I find others feel as I do.

I have, on my late tour visited Molokai, administered the Lord

supper, met the church on several occasions, examined the school &c. It is a very wakeful, prayerful & active church, one of the best on the Islands. They had very improperly I think, restored Mr Dwight to church fellowship, without his making any confession, or being previously resto-red by his ministerial brethren, & he was taking an active part in the church. Some of the deacons pro-posed that he be their pastor, but it was easy to show them the impropriety of this, so long as he is under censure by his brethren, tho. his life be now blame-less & his efforts to do good commenda-ble, which all admit. He makes no confession, & is unwilling to make any that is satisfactory. But that church begins to feel their need of a pastor, & I hope in some way the Head of the church will send them the right one. A native pastor is hardly suffi-cient for such a large & difficult field, & yet I know ^no^ white man that is avail-able at present. I have partly pro-mised to visit them again in January, when the subject of a pastor will be renewed, the

Lord willing. You see I am not now a member of the Kings cabinet or Privy council, & feel more free than I used to, to preach & do what I can for the churches, in connexion with education. The tendency of things in our government is more to the world, & less in the direction of evangelical religion than it used to be, & I feel that in my position, it becomes me to stand to my post, as a man & a minister of God & I ask an interest in your prayers, that I may have grace to be faithful. I feel the need of them.

Mr Condes removal & Mr Alexanders taking his place, I regard as a favorable change. I have lately been to Wailuku & I came to the conclusion that Mr Bailey had better not attempt the pastorship of that church. He has a good school & is doing well in it.

Very respectfully & truly
Yours in the Lord,
R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong, Honolulu, Nov. 1, 1856. Rec'd, Dec. 29.

143 Rev. R. Armstrong
Northfield, Oct. 13/56 – Recd. Dec. 15/56

It is true we have all become "dumb dogs", in regard to writing for your paper. My apology is that being a public man it is out of place for me, to do much in this way. But I will stir up others to write. I feel that you are ahead of us in zeal, & go ahead but we must wake up. The time is short. The Missy Ship will do something to arouse us & the

native particularly.
Excuse these scraps.
I write them because
the mail is delayed
an hour.
Yours R. A.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Oct. 16 – Rec'd. Dec. 15. 1856.

ans. Jan. 7

I have just made a
tour of two months
visiting the schools of
the Islands of Maui,
Molokai, & Lanai.
The schools never app-
ared more prosperous
on the whole. This is
owing to an improvement
in collecting & disbursing
the school tax. The
Seminary at Lahaina-
-luna has 75 scholars
& is doing well. A finer
company of native
boys I never saw.
They are orderly, ind[illegible]

-rious, & make good progress in their studies.

From the experiment we have made thus far, it is clear that the natives can & will acquire the English language. It is now the language for business & the business men among natives must have it, or be [illegible].

The church at Wai-luku is in a low state, but I think Mr. Alexander will remove there, when Mr. Conde leaves, & from this

with God's blessing I hope much good. I did all I could when there to stir up the church & to call him & give him a support. By all means I w^d say, accept Mr. Conde's offer in regard to the house & lot. It is very reasonable.

In Mr. Baldwin's ch. at Lahaina, there is a good state of things, never better. I was much pleased with my visit there. Still they need a pastor, & don't keep Bro. B. too long.

In the parish of Wo.

Baldwin of Hana also. There has been a waking up. He seems to take hold with great zeal & the work goes on.

The church & schools have been in a low state there.

The Molokai people need & must have a pastor soon, & I think it will be best to send them out one, that Island has the best school on the group. Hitchcock did a great work there. The judgement will show it.

Our young King has been very correct, in his deportment since his marriage. I would write more if I had time.

My yours
R. Armstrong

(Private) 144

Honolulu, Mar. 10, 1857.

R. Anderson D.D.
Boston.

Dear Brother;

In addition to my official letter, I must say a few things. First in regard to Mr Beckwith. You are aware that he is my son in law, & therefore you will make due allowance for what I say in regard to him. It has been his wish & intention for years, almost from childhood, to preach the gospel; but some how or other since he left Williams College, he has been pressed to teach, & for this we here think him remarkably qualified. During last year the Trustees, believing it would promote his usefulness as head of the College, to be ordained to the ministry, suggested it to him; & accordingly he has been ~~lately~~ ordained & has preached three times with much acceptance. He is self taught in theology, & will feel the need of a more thorough training; but I think, he has learned one thing, & that is to sit at Jesus feet & learn of him. You will be convinced of this, if you hear him preach his sermon; the third he ever wrote, on a "crucified Saviour". I feel considerable confidence that he will be well received by your people who have

means. At any rate many hearts will follow him, & none with more affection than his beloved pupils, who will long for his return. Two weeks since, five of them united with the church & many of them give promise of great usefulness. In fact, I doubt whether there is not another collection of youth, combining so much intelligence, with so much piety, in any school in the world. If our College can be sustained, here we may look, under God, for men & women, to build up our waste places, & carry on the work in the multitude of Islands, far west of us. The importance of our institution magnifies, the more I look at the great work we have to do here in the Pacific, & I cannot but hope, the Lord will furnish us the means of carrying it on.

Your letter of Dec. 5th to our Missy Society, has stirred up some talk & feeling among us. Mr Castle feels very deeply, & I hear of others, not of the mission. But I hardly know what to say, to put things right. Bro Clark & I have long labored together in the utmost harmony. He is an excellent man, & reliable; but lacks force, is not popular as a secretary, is slow & dull especially in public. So that I doubt whether he will be chosen Sec of the Society again. Then to have charge of all the Missy affairs here, involves the necessity of accounts business talent. The Morning Star will require a good deal of care; purely secular. Castle & Cooke cannot be expected to have this care without compensation, if they are no longer your agents, nor will they, I think, feel bound to attend to the wants of the brethren at a distance, any more than other merchants. This will increase the expenses of some, & more or less embarrass all of them. Again, I think, the Directors of the Hawn Missy Society are not quite the right medium through which the Board should operate. It is a body annually elected, by the donors, & contains

men not suitable to deliberate on our missionary affairs. For some two or three years, one of our directors was not even a professor of religion & one of them now is a fiery, rash, hotheaded methodist! I am now speaking inter nos. Such men are not suitable to manage your & our missy business out here. They will spoil it I fear. I think a business committee chosen by those still in a measure dependent upon the Board, & not all of necessity of the mission, or ex missionaries, subject to your approval, would be better. We have men here who would do well, & I think would serve. Mr Hall, for instance, & Mr Goodale, Judge Robertson & the like. There are many delicate things to be attended to in the cases that come before such a body, & it should be composed of prudent & reliable men. The Secretary of this business com. approved by you, would be the man of all work, & should be a good business man withal. The Ha. miss. society could make grants for Micronesia through this body, & could employ the Morning Star to carry supplies to Fatuhiwa.

Your embarrassment in regard to some of the brethren teaching English school is natural. I too have not failed to say to them, they [illegible] teach school & do justice to their chur[illegible] the case has been this; the people would ha[ve some]body to teach their children English; if n[o one] else could be had, they would pick up [a run]away sailor, or loafer, whether he could rea[d] [illegible] of correct English or not. This they actua[lly] do in several cases, & several of the breth[ren] took up this work, in order to keep out [those] that were worse than none. Some of

Mormon priests, polluted & vile. But, with the exception of Mr Shipman at Kau, I think they have given the work into other hands, & Mr S. will do so as soon as he can find a suitable man to take the school. He is a most laborious, devoted man, & very successful in his work. Several of the ladies yet teach, as Mrs Smith, & Mrs Baldwin & are doing good.

We have been very desirous to know your mind in regard to Mr Beckwith visit just now; but the mail does not come, & as we are to be "principal" we see no other way than to send him off. Perhaps, if we had your answer, you would show us reasons, why he should defer his visit for a season. The fact is, we are "hard up", the work is too much for our two instructors, & unless the school is well taught, our young men will get dissatisfied & be off to the States. Thus far, I think, they are well satisfied, & feel rather proud of their institution.

I have sounded the government in regard to investing our funds here, & the following resolution expresses its mind on the subject. "Be it Resolved, That the Secretary of this council be directed to communicate in writing [...]resident of the Board of Education, that [...]quiry on behalf of the Trustees of Oahu College [w]hether the government would be willing [...] at interest $50,000 of the funds of the College, [...] such an amount be raised, has been before [...]uncil, & the council determined that the govt. [...] be ready to negotiate for that sum when [...] money was forthcoming, & arrange what [...] it should be paid & security given, & all [p]oints connected with the loan, the Minister of [...] acting on the part of the government"!! [...] give us wisdom & strength to ensure success [...] great work.

Very truly yours in Christian bonds
R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu March 6. 1857.
Rec'd. May 6.

144½

Honolulu, Mar. 11, 1857.

1

R. Anderson D.D.
Miss. House
Boston.

Dear Brother:

My letter of yesterday was closed at sunset ~~but~~ the packet hove in sight with the mail from U.S. Your <u>private</u> letter of Jan. 7th ult. & your official letter to R. Armstrong & the Messrs Beckwiths in relation to the Presidents visit to the States, are received, & I have only time now to acknowledge the receipt, as the mail is about to close, & Mr Beckwith will be off.

I am glad the Prud. Com. approve of his visiting you <u>now</u>, & I have no doubt, it will gratify the trustees & friends of the College to know this fact. As to my joining him by & by, that will be duly considered by the Trustees when we can have a meeting. I make what seems to be the Lords will case; but I confess the call ~~tak~~

by surprise. It does not seem to me that
I am the man for such an agency.
I am too old & rusty; have lost the
little fire I once had, & almost the use
of my mother tongue, being so un-
accustomed to speak in it. Were
I called to go to Micronesia or the
regions beyond, I should feel much
better fitted for the work. There I should
feel at home. But the matter will
be prayerfully & calmly considered.
I don't know any thing hardly within
the limits of reason, that I would not
attempt in order to get our College well
founded, & with God's help I will try
to bring my mind to any thing
that the enterprise may require.
I have not seen the King on the
subject, & something will depend
on the view he takes of it. More on
this point at another time.

Give Beckwith wide room, & he
will make a good impression. Let him
have a place to speak at your anni-
versaries. He has youth, ardor & fire, & his
is warm. He speaks well.
haste. Truly & affly yours in the Lord
R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu March 11. 1857.
Rec'd May 6.

145

(Private)

Honolulu, Ap. 3. 1857.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother;

The Mr. Reynolds refered to in the enclosed, is a Lieut. in the U.S. Navy, is married & resides here now as naval agent. He has lived here several years, but has recently made a visit home to Lancaster Pa. his native place, where he tells me he saw Pres. Buchanan often, & he rather pressed me to write as I have, although he is not a religious man. But he is a very respectable man & friendly to our cause. He said, "you ought to have a good Presbyterian sent out as Commissioner & if you will state the matter to Pres. Buchanan he will send you one". He added also, "if you religious people are not active, the catholics at home will be". Mr. Gregg has told me he expects to be superseded, when his commission is out, which will be about September next, tho. he thinks he could remain another four years if he wished to do so. He is a ready man, an able lawyer no doubt, & although a catholic has shown no coolness toward us; but he is intemperate, & his influence on the King & Chiefs is bad.

Of course you will make what use you think best of the enclosed. It occured to me you might enclose it to some one in Washington who would show it to the President, unless it is too late.

The Trustees of Oahu College expect to have a full meeting in May at General Meeting when the question of my going to the States in pursuit of the endowment will be disposed of. The work in my office presents a great difficulty, & I hate to beg. But I will try to do my duty, with God's help.

The "Morning Star" is daily expected. The interest felt in her by our children of all colours & shapes is wonderful. In my sabbath school of native children about 300 shares have been taken. One little boy came up with $10 in his hand & took 80 shares! We make them for the sake of even change, 12½ cts each, as 10 ct. pieces are not current here. I enclose a copy of our native certificate of stock. The cut was made here. It was a happy hit this of setting the children to work to buy this vessel. Some of our ladies have prepared a new & elegant flag to be presented to the vessel on her arrival.

Very truly yours,

R. Armstrong.

They can endow the College if these will go to work.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu April 3, 1857.
Rec'd May 26.

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

146. A.L. to R. Anderson; 13 Aug. 1857
147. A.L. to R. Anderson; 17 Aug. 1857
148. A.L. to R. Anderson; 15 Oct. 1857
149. A.L. to R. Anderson; 27 Oct. 1857
150. A.L. to R. Anderson; 11 Nov. 1857

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

146

New York city,
Aug 13. 1857.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

Dear Brother;

You will not be surprised to hear that I am once more in my native land. After a severe conflict in my own mind as to the path of duty, & a good deal of hesitation on the part of my colleagues & friends at the Islands, we came to the conclusion, that it was best for me to come & here I am, after a journey of 43 days from the Island. I have just come to the "Bible house" & finding no one but the clerk, I seize the pen to report myself to you & I shall do the same to Mr Hill.

Mr Beckwith writes me to go on at once to Great Barrington, & I think I shall do so tomorrow, that we may confer together in regard to future plans for Oahu College. Please drop me a line to that place. "Great Barrington Mass", & advise me what course to pursue until the meeting of the Board in September. I

want to make the best possible use of my time, as I cannot with safety be long absent from the Islands; in fact I have run a good deal of risque in coming on this agency. Therefore, for the present, I do not wish to visit friends or do any thing that will divert me from the great object that has brought me here. What then is the first thing to be done? what are our prospects?

I have not seen Mr. Baldwin yet, but hope to, during the day.

How strange every thing looks here & how changed!

I have no news of importance from the Islands, but many things to talk over with you.

You must be very busy now in preparing for the Annual Meeting of the Board, & therefore I cannot expect to take up much of your time.

Very truly yours
with Christian regard,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
New York Aug 13. 185[illegible]
Rec'd Aug 14.

Great Barrington, Mass,
Aug. 17, 1857.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Boston,

Dear Brother;

I shall make my arrangements, with the leave of Providence, to be with you on Wednesday evening, next. Nothing will prevent me doing so, but detention in Springfield, & in ~~that~~ case I shall not be along until thursday. But I think I shall be there on Wedn evening.

I appreciate your remark in regard to headache, arising from too much pressure. I wonder that you have endured the work so long.

Mr Beckwith will not go on with me, as he is engaged in various matters that he wishes to complete before we engage in getting subscriptions

I want to see Thompson exceedingly
we were together in Princeton.

Very truly yours,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Great Barrington Aug. 17. 1867.
Rec'd. Aug. 19.

Rev. R. Armstrong, 148
Rec'd. Oct. 20.

McEwensville, North^d Co. Penn.
Oct. 15, 1857.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss^y House, Boston

Dear Brother;

Your note of the 12th inst. has just come to hand. The persons who compose the Haw^n evangelical association, are mentioned in the Report of its last meeting, which I have received, & loaned to Rufus Anderson Hawkes, in Princeton Sem^y on monday last, but which I will request him to send you. They are so far as I can name them from memory, Thurston, Paris, Shipman, Coan, Lyman, Dr Whitmore, Lyons, Bond, Taylor, W. O. Baldwin, D. Baldwin, W. P. Alexander, Bailey, Pogue, Andrews, Clark, Smith,

Cooke, L. Andrews, E. G. Beckwith, Bishop, Damon, Strong, Parker, Emerson, Gulick, A. Smith, Rowell, Johnston, Wilcox, Native preachers, Kuaea, Waimalu, Nahinu.

The printed report contains only those who were present at genl. meeting, I suppose.

The association is composed of ministers, of congl. churches, & of ~~those~~ a few Laymen formerly or now connected with the mission. The ministers are not all pastors now however. I hope this will be a sufficiently definite answer to your question, for I do not know how to make it more so.

I am glad you are consulting Mrs. Baldwin.

I am by the dying bed of a dear sister, & cannot tell very definitely when I shall be.

in N. York, Possibly I may by the 29th or 30th. Near the time I will let you know. I want to sail by Nov. 5th if I can.

I am to see Com. Stockton again in regard to the College. He seems well disposed, but was too busy to attend to the matter when I saw him in Princeton on Monday last.

The Merriams of Springfield will do something, but not just now. So will Peck & others.

My visit to Princeton was very pleasant &, I think, useful. They had heard but little about the Sand. Islands for a long while.

A son of Mr Forbes, Rufus Anderson, is quite inclined to go out & take charge of Molokai church, if they will wait a year till he is through his studies in the Theo. Sem? He is well spoken of. What do you think of this.

I am waiting for the proofs of my map, & the algebra, & then my

my business in this land will be done.

My kind regards to Mrs. Anderson & the family. I have written Mary in relation to the names of cities for the map, & shall send a new copy to the engraver.

Very truly yours

R. Armstrong.

McEwensville Northd. Co. Penn.
Oct. 27. 1857.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother;

I shall not be in New York by the 31st inst. as I expected. It will be the 5th or 6th of Nov. before I reach there. On the 2d of Nov. I expect to be in Washington, then go to Princeton, to see Com. Stockton then to New York. How long it will require to visit the Commodore I do not know; but I wish to take time for it, & get him, if possible, interested in our College.

The reason why I delay so long here is the tardiness of that Boston engraver Bradford, 221 Washington St. He don't send me a proof of the map, & now writes that he made a mistake, & had to go back & begin the work anew. I must

see the proof & therefore shall not be able to leave in the Steamer of Nov. 5th but shall calculate to take that of the 20th Nov. This delay I regret very much as I want to be at home; but the map is so important to our schools that I want to see it completed before I leave. I shall "put up" with Dr. Thebs when I return to N. York. He is an old class mate.

These people in Pa. are hungry as wolves for news from the Islands & keep me talking all the while. I have not spoken less than four times each Sabbath since I left New England; & last week I had a fine opportunity to present our College before the Synod of Philadelphia; about 100 ministers were present, & seemed greatly interested in the enterprise. We shall get some money in this quarter by & by, I think.

Please let me hear from you in New York.

Your aff. brother

R. ~~Anderson~~ Armstrong.

* The first letter I ever saw addressed by a man to himself! S.L.P.

Rev. R. Armstrong

McEwensville Oct. 27. 1857.

Rec'd. Oct. 30.

Ans. Nov. 2.

New York, Nov. 11. '57

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother;

I take the earliest moment to reply to yours of the 2d inst. & I shall go to Boston, with leave of Providence to-morrow, to see you in the evening & on friday; on friday evening return here. I have many things to say, but will wait till we meet. I shall go to Roxbury, if you are not at the Miss. House, but no matter about sleeping, I can return to Boston for that.

Truly yours, R. Anthony.

Rev. R. Armstrong

New York Nov. 11. 1857.

Rec.^d Nov. 13.

✓

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

151. A.L. to R. Anderson; 15 Jan. 1858
152. A.L. to R. Anderson; 20 Mar. 1858
153. A.L. to R. Wyllie; 21 April 1858
154. A.L. to R. Anderson; 29 April 1858
155. A.L. to R. Anderson; 29 May 1858
156. A.L. to R. Anderson; 10 June 1858

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

ABC 19.1 v.14

Armstrong, Richard

157. A.L. to R. Anderson; 6 Oct. 1858
158. A.L. to R. Anderson; 15 Dec. 1858
159. A.L. to R. Anderson; 17 June 1859
160. A.L. to R. Anderson; 18 Jan. 1859
161. A.L. to R. Anderson; 12 May 1859
162. A.L. to R. Anderson; 7 Ma7 1859

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

ABC 19.1 v.14 (135-165)

151

Honolulu, Jan. 15, 1858.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

Dear Brother;

You see, by my date, that I am once more at my Island home. I hope I feel some gratitude, in view of the kind Providence that watched over me, going & coming, over more than twenty thousand miles, without harm. No evil happened to me in all the way, on sea or land, although danger was often near, & in the "Star of the West", on the Atlantic side, the yellow fever was in our midst, & our steamer was altogether too heavily loaded. I was from home six months & six days, three months & eight days of which were spent in the States. It seems like a dream. In 1831-32 I was 151 days on the passage out to the Islands.

I feel refreshed by my visit, have gained four pounds of flesh, & have not felt so vigorous, for years. Feelings of sadness were not entirely wanting, as I passed over my native land, but the revival of

old & the formation of new friendships; the cordial greetings of kindred; the sight tho. transient of the wonderful improvements of the age, & above all, the enjoyment of that holy convocation in Providence, will be, I think, a source of enjoyment to me, during the remainder of life. I went reluctantly, but I am now glad I went, although the object I sought was but partially accomplished. Not the least among my enjoyments was the pleasant hours spent with yourself & your charming family, & the gentlemen at the missionary house. I now feel better acquainted with you all, & the result is an increase of confidence in you all, & affection for you.

I arrived here on the 2d inst. forty two days from N. Y. three of which were spent in San Francisco. Mr. Beckwith had arrived about two weeks before me. We found both our families well & things going on much as usual.

(The College was re-opened yesterday with fair prospects. Forty four pupils were present & about twenty more are expected. This is more than I expected after so long a dis-

-pension. The return of young Alexander to his native land, as professor in the College, makes a good impression, & my acquaintance with him on the voyage, has increased my confidence in him, both as a scholar & a man. He is now on a short visit to his parents at Wailuku.)

There is one point I wished I had talked more with you about, that is the inability of some of the brethren in the mission, to meet the expenses of their children at Punahou. Those who have large families, as expenses now are, will find it very hard; & I hear some cannot come, because of the expense, especially now, that tuition is to be charged them. My impression is that you will have to add a little in some way to their salaries, that is some of them, to enable them to educate their children. You provide for this in your letter of Oct. 21st.

Your letter of Oct. 21/57 is printed, & in circulation. So far as I have heard, the arrangement is more satisfactory to the brethren, than to have your business done, through the Haw. Miss. Society. I think, for the present, it is the best arrangement you can make. Most, if not all, of the Special Committee should reside at Honolulu

that they may be called together at any time. One or two directors of the Ha. Miss. Society, I hear, express some disappointment at the course things have taken, but generally they appear to be satisfied.

Jan. 16th We had a meeting of Trustees of Oahu Col. this evening. Mr. Spooner asks for $900 salary. If we give me it, it must be assessed on the board bills, & this will keep away, many pupils of the miss. families, who ought to be there. We hesitated & directed Mr. Castle to state the matter to the Prud. Com. If expenses come too heavy at Punahou, the mission children must stay away, & this will defeat our object. You make no provision for the salary of W. D. Alexander, & suppose you expect it to be raised from the tuition, & this is well; if the parents can pay it. Here is the pinch. I have told Bro. Alexander of our conversation in reference to his case. He feels anxious about the house he lives in, as Conde has written out to Dr. Judd his agent, to collect the rent!

The King is not well & I fear he will not long [illegible] health. He will not live as he ought to. Entre nous, as things are, the government is very weak; not as efficient as it was five years ago. We miss Judge Lee very much.

Please present my kindest regards to Mrs. Anderson & the other members of your family, especially my friend & fellow laborer in map making, Miss Mary, & Mr. & Mrs. Kingman. I now know how to think of you all at the Miss. House & send a fraternal salutation to all your associates.

Very truly yours, in the best of bonds,

R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong D.D.
Honolulu [illegible] 1859

Jan. 19. The Trustees of Oahu Col. met again on the 17th inst. & formally appointed W. D. Alexander as professor of Greek.

On the 22d of last June Hon. E. H. Allen was duly elected or nominated as one of the Trustees of Oahu College, in place of Chief Justice Lee deceased, subject to the approval of the Prud. Committee. It was left for the Sec'y pro tem. during my absence, to report this to you, & ask for the approval of this nomination, but I think it has not been done. Please see that it is attended to as soon as convenient, & report the result to me. Mr. Allen meets with us, & promises to be an efficient member of the Board.

Your letter to Mr. Wyllie, in relation to the conditional grant of $10,000 by the gov't. has not yet been presented to the King in council; but Mr. Wyllie stated verbally in council last week, that he had received it, gave the amount of its contents, & said he would bring it forward as soon as there could be time to consider it.

The Romish Party here make such an outcry about building up a Prot. college with government funds, that Mr Castle & others have had doubts whether it is expedient to urge the government to make this a bona fide donation, lest it be always a disturbing force in our machinery; but we shall consider the subject farther. We may think it best to give land, govern-ment land, to the college, instead of money, as we have some that is valuable.

During my absence, the papists, Commissioner Perrin at their head, have been making me trouble by a revival of their old complaints about the schools being all under Protestant management. It gives me a vast amount of work & is very vexations. They are most untiring in their efforts, & the secular arm of France is their main reliance. We are weak, & they know it; hence their insolence. But with God's help I will try to do my duty to this people in the face of all their hostility. If I am put down, I want to fall at my post, fighting manfully.

R. A.

[illegible]

Private 152

Honolulu, Mar. 20, 1858.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss. House,
Boston,

Dear Brother;

I must say a few words to you before the mail goes out.

I think you will do well to give a pretty large discretionary power to your agents here in regard to the "Morning Star"; otherwise there may be at times very inconvenient embarrassment & loss. I thought of this lately, when positive orders came to remove Capt. Moore, & detain the vessel here until a new captain shall arrive. But the next mail brought relief, & she is now off to the Marquesas group. While she is under the Am. flag her captain must be an American; & this may be embarrassing at some future time. Orramel Gulick would make a good captain, first rate but he is a Hawaiian subject. He is a miss.y at heart, & is intending to go to Micronesia as a miss.y I understand. Asa G. Thurston has gone as mate of the "Morning Star", & he would make a good captain; he has run a brig between the Islands, for more than a year. I think it will

be best to place the brig, eventually, in the care of one of our own men, born here, at home here, & whose heart is in the work. As things have turned out, we are all sorry that Cap. Moore is removed; but I suppose you could not control the minds of those who insure. Moore has proved himself to be more of a man, a Christian man too, & a navigator, than we expected.

I have not yet been able to get the final action of the government on the proposed grant of $10.000 to the College; but things look favorable. Some of our high officers are afraid it will lead to a request, & perhaps a demand, for a similar grant, for a catholic college, & France will back it up. This may be; but still I think, the government will venture to make the grant, tho' it may have to go before the Legislature, before it is completed.

I fear we are not by any means through our trouble with France. In fact, my mind of late has been much burdened with concern, at the prospect ahead. I have not seen the new Treaty, that has been negotiated, but I have been told by one who has, that it is far from being favorable to the Hawaiian nation. It will only make matters worse. Now, if the King refuses to ratify it, there will be undoubtedly another storm. France will revive all her old, absurd demands, & have a force here to back them up. If it is ratified, we shall suffer.

Another thing. Mr. Gregg is about to be superseded as U. S. Commissioner, & will be appointed

by the King as Minr. of finance. Gregg is a smart man, ready writer, good speaker & a lawyer; but he is intemperate, & has at times acted very foolishly. He is an out & out catholic, but seems to be very liberal. How he will act under new circumstances remains to be seen. I confess I dread to see an intemperate man put into any office. I mention these things to you inter nos, because spending so much money as the Board does out here, you ought to know our affairs & then you can know how to pray for us. What a comfort it is to know that the Lord reigns! On this rock I try to stand, when days are dark.

You will be sorry to hear that Geo. E. Beckwith, Prof. of Latin in the Col. is obliged to retire, on account of his eyes, which were injured by hard study while he was in Williams College. The Trustees have granted him leave of absence to visit the U. States, & authorized him to secure another professor, one who can teach Latin for the present, but eventually take the mathematics. Mr. Beckwith relinquishes his salary now, & will pay his own expenses in travelling, but must be reimbursed for any expense he may incur, in looking up a professor. He may recover so as to resume his work in the college, but I confess, I do not expect it. If a good opportunity offers for him to speak in public, for the College, you need not hesitate to give him a chance. He is a good speaker & possesses a strong mind. I advise him to call on you very soon after his arrival at his father's in Barrington. Young Alexander does nobly; better even than

we expected. He is not only a scholar, but possesses a genial nature like his father, that makes him very agreeable to the students. They will be short handed now for a while, but they got some assistance from the students in teaching the lower classes.

I should have said, the Trustees have appointed Prof. Beckwith as agent for the Col. to collect funds & books at his discretion; but his first object will be his health, & may not be able to do much in the way of soliciting. In fact, I do not expect he will. His eyes are very weak, & I think he will be obliged to give up books entirely & go to active employment.

The Ship Polynesia owned by Mr Hunnewell is here & about to sail with a cargo of oil for N. Bedford. I shall put on board of her a small box of shells for my young friend Miss Mary. Cap. Perkins promises to see that it is taken care of & sent to you.

Mar. 25th I have good reason to think, the new Treaty with France will not be ratified by the King & in that case, look out for more trouble. The French priests & Com. Perrin, have been reviving, of late, the old complaints about the schools.

A good pastor is greatly needed for the Fort St. Church here, & how are we to get one? It is a very important post, but we have no man to fill it. Beckwith has some authority to act in the matter.

I am very glad of your likenesses — have sent one to the College, keep one, & give the others to some of the brethren.

I am glad I visited you, for now I know how you look, & how you live.

Please present my kind regards to all your family.

Truly yours in Christian bonds,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu March 20. 1858
Recd May [illegible]

Dept. of Pub. Instruction
Honolulu Apr. 21. 1858.

Sir,

I have the honor to return to you the the letter of Dr. Anderson of Oct. 15. 1857, and your reply to the same of Dec. 24th last, which were refered to the Board of Education for its consideration, together with the Report of the Board on the same, which was yesterday submitted to the King and Council and approved.

Your Excellency will see by this Report, the King's Government has done all in its power to comply with the respectful suggestion of the Missionary Board in Boston, through its honored Secretary. The reason why the grant of $10.000, towards the endowment of the College, has not been made unconditional, without any reference to the action of the Legislature, is the fact that a doubt exists as to the power of the Executive under the law, to make such disposition of a portion of the School Fund, or of the land set apart for Educational purposes. The law does not seem to have con-

templated such disposition; and in matters of this kind, where sectarian jealousies are apt to arise, it is necessary to proceed on safe ground, and that will be to ask the Legislature to confirm the grant of land to the College; After that there can be no question on the subject.

This Board has proposed a grant of land in preference to money, because our School Fund is small, a little over $30,000; it consists of Bills Receivable, some of which are not very good, and it is pressingly needed for the publication of books, and meeting other expenses of the Department. The land may not be so immediately available for the support of the College, but ultimately may be more valuable than the money.

To me it is a gratifying circumstance connected with this transaction, that it has not been at all necessary for me personally to urge, either upon my Colleages in the Board or upon the King and Government, the importance of sustaining that Institution. Connected as I am by family ties with its President, to do so might ~~subject~~ me to suspicions of self interest! But the fact is,

from the first, neither the King nor any of his high Officers have needed any urging in the matter. All seemed, at once, to appreciate the subject, as one intimately connected, not only with the civilization of the Hawaiian people, but of other kindred nations in this ocean. The only question has been, as to our authority & ability to make the grant.
In a private letter to me, when about to visit the United States in June last, a letter which was much admired by many persons of distinction in different parts of the country, His Majesty expressed his regret, that this donation is so small, owing to the poverty of his Government, and that he could not raise the whole endowment. This I believe to be the general feeling of his high Officers.
I have no doubt therefore, but that, that liberal and enlightened body in Boston, will be fully satisfied with what the government has done in this matter; and at the proper time, will be ready to second another effort to complete the endowment. Should this College be well and permanently sustained, sending forth yearly a class of educated minds, to exert their influence on this small nation, its establishment cannot fail to be looked back upon

in future years, as one of the most enlightened measures of His Majesty's reign.

Your most Obedient
Humble Servant
R. Armstrong.
Pres. Bd. Education.

His Excellency
R. C. Wyllie.
H. H. M. Minr. of For. Relations
&c &c &c

[illegible]

Rev. R. Armstrong to R. C. Wyllie
Rec'd June 28, 1858
Grant to Oahu College } 1858 21 April
Enclosure in Mr Wyllie's letter of 26 April 1858 to Dr Rufus Anderson

(Private) 154

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu, Ap. 29, 1858.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.

Rec^d June 14.

Dear Brother;

Mr. Wyllie has written you about the $10,000 donation to the College. The government would have made the grant without any reference to the Legislature, but on examining the law, a doubt arose as to our power to do so. We can give land & feel it less than money. Our school fund we need to enable us to print books, build school houses, &c; & the land, will be as good, & if we manage it well, it may be better than money for the College. I have very

little doubt, that the Legislature will sanction the grant.

The catholics are giving me a great deal of trouble. Perrin write to Wyllie, complaining of partiality in the management of the school, the old song. Wyllie write to me, & I have just completed a despatch of seven sheets in reply! It is a matter, Perrin has no more business to meddle with than he has with the Kings kitchens; & yet he will not let us alone. There are plenty of professions of friendship for the King, on the part of France, but they are all hollow, so long as France denies him the right to manage his

own affairs, as every sove-
-reign has a right to do. But there
is one good result from all this, it
turns the natives against popery,
& makes more hard work for the
priests.

The King has acted very well
about the College, & he was
pleased to know that his letter
that was read in Providence
made so good an impression.
He is a real "smart fellow" as
we say; has a clear, weakeful
mind, but lacks perseverance
& a systematic attention to
business. His greatest lack tho.
is grace. He is very careless in
regard to religion; so is his
brother Lot. The Queen is about
to be confined! She is a very
exemplary woman.

What glorious revival

you are having! Blessed be our Heavenly Father. O how we need them here! Our churches are very dead. J. E. Beckwith is authorized to find a pastor for our Fort St. Church. One is distressingly needed, & if you help him in any way, please do so.

This Honolulu is destined to be a great whaling port, & we need a living Christianity to save us.

Please hand the enclosed to my young friend, Miss Mary.

The Legislature is soon to meet & I am very busy with my report.

Truly Yours,

R. Armstrong.

P.S. Cap. Moran we know of old. A good old gentleman — baptist! But for a permanent captain, we must get one of our own men here — O. H. Gulick, I think.

Honolulu, May 29. 1858.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss. House,
Pem. Square Boston;

Dear Brother;

Your letters of March 16th & 17th were duly received.

In relation to Chief Justice Allen, I have not shown your letter to any one, but have felt the pulse of several of the Trustees of Oahu College, in relation to the matter of your inquiry, such as Pres. Beckwith, Clark, Castle & Alexander, & all agree with me, that his appointment as Trustee of the College, ought to be confirmed. The reasons are 1. He is already in the body, & is a zealous and efficient Trustee. Were the election yet to take place, there would be more reason to doubt; but it was discussed before his election, last year, & the opinion was unanimous that he was the best choice we could make. 2. Judge Allen informs me that he is not a member

(The mail is about to close & I cannot get the letter copied.)

of any church, but his sentiments are unitarian, & his associations have been with that denomination. He was graduated at Williams College, has been much amongst orthodox people, & so far from having any prejudice against, he is very friendly to them. 3. The religious character of the College was discussed in the Board of Education & Privy council & Mr. Allen strongly advocated the importance of aiding the institution, constituted just as it is. 4. Should the government make the grant of $10.000 absolute in land, or money, as it undoubtedly will, it is very probable that the King will designate Judge Allen as one of the Trustees, to be approved by the American Board of course, & the effect here would be very bad, should he be rejected in Boston.

Judge Lee was, at the time of his election, about as much of a Unitarian as Judge Allen is. At least, that is my impression. I hope therefore the Board will confirm without delay, his nomination. If we confine the appointment of Trustees to our denomination, the effect here will be bad. It will appear illiberal & exclusive, & it will impossible to make it appear to be any thing but a sectarian missionary school, & not a national institution as we design it to be. So that on the

whole, we think the welfare of the College will be promoted by confirming his appointment. Still, I may be mistaken. Unless others of the same denomination be chosen, he will be only one among thirteen.

The two inquiries put to you by Mr. Smith, I think, need no answer. I do not see why he should have asked them. Provision must be made for educating the children of your missionaries in the College, in the salaries of their parents. Anything beyond this must be provided for in some other way, as is usual in other colleges. We shall doubtless need to have some means provided to aid poor students, as we go along; & how it can be done will be a practical question soon.

Mr. Spooner says he cannot live on $700 a year & asks for more salary, at least $900; but the Trustees have not acted on the subject. I do not see how we can increase his salary.

The Haw.^n Association is now in session; a very full attendance & a good spirit prevails. O how we long to be refreshed from on high, as you are in the States. We have daily meetings for prayer in town, & there is much prayer, but the blessing does not come.

The brethren generally, so far as I see, approve entirely of your idea of ~~your~~ committing your business here to the "Special Committee" instead of the Haw. Miss. Society, & so far our experience shows the

wisdom of the course you have resolved upon. But individuals of the Haw. Miss Society, are not over much pleased that the business is taken out of their hands. The spirit manifested by some of them both last year & this is, of itself sufficient reason why they should not have it.

Mr. Alexander, one of our noblest men is in poor health, & my idea is, when you are ready for another effort for the college, to send him to complete the endowment. He will not be powerful in the pulpit, or on the platform, but in private he will make up all deficiencies.

Our King is very happy, having a son, to be heir to his throne.

I reciprocate all you say of "pleasant recollections of the visit of Mr. Beckwith & myself; he does also. It was not without toil & self denial, but still, a privilege I never expected to enjoy, & for which I feel very grateful.

Being now placed on the "Special Com." I shall feel that I am in closer relations with you & with God's help, shall aid your operations here in the Pacific, to the best of my ability, that is of

The more we see of the structure of the "Morning Star", the more the fault of her builder appears. It is too bad & he ought to be exposed. Cap. Brown will tell you all. He is a fine old man.

June 1. We have designated Mr. Alexander to be in readiness to go to complete the endowment when you there shall give him the signal. He must go somewhere for his health.

I think the "Special Com." here ought to have power to fill temporary vacancies; for at times there may not be enough to do business, on acc. of absence, sickness &c. Please think of this.

Yours in Christian bonds,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong.
Honolulu May 29, 63
Rec'd July 28

arrangement is approved.

156

Honolulu, June 18, 1858.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss'y House,
Pem. Square,
Boston;

Dear Brother;
Since I last wrote you, & that was by last mail, Mr Spooner of Oahu College, applied for more salary. The Trustees replied that they had no means by which to comply with his request. To make an additional charge in the board bills, would oppress the parents, whose salaries this year, were estimated, without any allowance for this increase. Mr S. then sent in his resignation, saying he could not live through the year on $700. Rather than add any thing to the board bills, for I know most of the parents, are hard pressed to pay them now, I assumed the $100, he asked for, or rather said he could get along with personally, with the understanding that the P. m. Committee be requested to make it up for the present year. Please lay the matter before the Committee, if you

think proper & inform me of the result. We could not let Mr & Mrs Spooner go from the institution now without injury, & to add to the board bills this year, would have a bad effect on parents & students who are poor & have to struggle hard to get along. Some of them, had begun to talk already of leaving & some of boarding themselves, when they heard that there was a prospect, that the board was to be increased. Next year, it is expected that Mr Spooners salary will be charged in the board bills, & the parents will prepare for it. So that I saw no other way to meet the difficulty, but the one above stated. But I shall be satisfied with what the Prud. Com. shall do in the matter.

The Trustees have designated Mr. Alexander to be in readiness to go in pursuit of the endowment, when you shall give him the signal, as I wrote you. He must go somewhere soon, or his labors are ended; & I think it would be well for him to take one of the fall clippers & go round Cape Horne, so as to be in the U. States next summer: However, you will know best, when he should take up the work.

His son Wm DeWitt, now Prof in the college, fully answers our expectations in regard to him. How wonderfully the Lord works! If our children here turn out well

; if our College succeeds well, & the good hand of God continues to be upon us, I think I can see, the means being provided to evangelize the whole Pacific. Our Royal school, now in charge of Maurice B. Beckwith, an older brother of the President, had its annual examination yesterday. There are in it over 40 native boys, & most of them are decidedly promising. They have been taught in the English language exclusively for more than 2 years, & really their progress is beyond any thing I ever anticipated from natives. Seven of them are well prepared to enter the preparatory department of the College, & if we can in any way provide the means to pay tuition we shall have them enter next term. One of them is a youth of very superior ability, & is seriously inclined. I hope great things from this school, & this Beckwith is not only an accomplished teacher, but a man of God, who seeks the welfare of the soul, as well as of the culture of the mind.

(Private) The new treaty with France has been ratified by the Emperor & is now before the King & Council, for his ratification. In my opinion, it is very objectionable in some parts of it, & if ratified will make plenty of trouble. On the other hand, if not ratified, France will be offended

& give us more trouble. But you will hear. The Legislature met yesterday. The session will be short, as the new civil code is not quite prepared, & it will be necessary to meet again in the fall.

Very truly yours as ever in
Christian fellowship,

R. Armstrong.

The new Commissioner, Judge Borden, seems to be friendly to good people & good objects, & his wife is a very agreeable lady, but they are not pious people. I learn from him that President Buchanan remembered what I said to him in regard to the conduct of some of our former commissioners here, & expressed a strong desire that hereafter that officer might aid in every way, in elevating & christianizing the people.

R. A.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu, June 10, 1858.
Recd Oct 14 (?)
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

(Private) 157

Honolulu, Oct. 6. 1858.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss. House, Boston:

My dear Brother;

Your welcome letters of July 31st & Aug. 9th last, are received; the latter to day. We are very glad to know, that the appointment of Judge Allen, as trustee of Oahu Col. is confirmed. He takes an interest in the College & exerts it on the government, in a very judicious way. But I am sorry to add, the Judge is just now very sick, not very dangerously so I hope.

I am greatly obliged to you for the interest you have taken in my son, & for writing ~~me~~ in his behalf. So far as I can command the means I shall do as you advise & I have sent him a note to Mr. Gordon, requesting of him, the favor to advance Wm. N. $150 on my account & allow me to pay it here. But all of us govt. officers here are in a strait for funds, as the treasury is empty & there is no telling when it will be replenished. Our finances have not been well managed, for some time, & we are suffering the consequences. Every department is embarrassed at present & we shall

be obliged to curtail all round, or resort to heavier taxation, which the people can ill bear. Aside from my salary I have some wild land on Maui, but it lies unproductive, & hence my son there, may be obliged to resort to some means of supporting himself, very soon, & any aid you in that case can render him, to get into a law office, or to teaching, or any thing else that is lawful, that he can do, will be most gratefully acknowledged by me, & I trust, by himself also. My great source of anxiety, in regard to him is, I fear, he is not truly pious. As I know you pray for all the children of missionaries, may I ask that this poor youth, be not forgotten by you. If a Christian & a good lawyer, he might be very useful here. Such a man as Judge Lee, is the best kind of a missionary, for certain work. They can preach, where you & I could not.

The College is prosperous as we could expect. The number of students is over 70, only 5 in the regular college course. The faculty is able, enterprising & popular in & out of the institution. Prof. Haskell makes a good impression thus far & Alexander is decidedly able, & is amiable withal. Pres. Beckwith has become quite popular as a preacher. His sermon on the death of Coady, an enterprising young merchant here, has raised his reputation as a preacher very much, which works well for the college in the foreign community. But our

number of students in the College proper, must necessarily be small, for a long time to come, as the foreign community is small & not as a whole much in favor of liberal education. Six pure native boys have been received into the preparatory department, who promise well, & more may be received next year, & this has made a favorable impression on the native community; but I do not expect many, if any natives, at present, will take a regular college course. It will require too long time for their patience & too much means for their purse. Still they will get a good thorough training in the English branches, & some of them, something more.

I fear too, some of our youth, & even their parents will not be satisfied with the education obtained in so small an institution & so far from the civilized world, tho. I am convinced, that so far, taken as a whole, they are better grounded scholars, than are found in many much larger institutions in the State. I think it will be well for you, therefore, to allude to this subject occasionally in your correspondence, & impress upon all, the importance of union & concentration of scholars as well as other efforts to build up the College. If a liberal endowment can be secured, it will tend to give body, & an idea of permanency to it, that nothing else can, & Mr. Alexander will go on this business at your signal.

I have been travelling among the schools most of the time, for three months, & find

them doing their usual work of teaching the children to read, write & cipher, & some of them go a good deal farther than this. But what pains me is to see such a rapid decrease every where. In Kohala in 1847, I found over 1100 children in the schools, in July last, I could not find over 450, & yet about all the children attend school! On Molokai, where I used to meet 1400, I now meet about 500! And so also in other places. The fact is, the native race is wasting away with increased rapidity & as the white race is gradually gaining ground, it is a matter of great interest to secure as good a class of white men here as possible & to do this we need good farmers scattered over the Islands. The great product of the Islands is to be sugar. This is clear & I wish we could induce some few good capitalists there in Boston, to invest a little money in sugar plantations here, under the management of good, go ahead, & pious Yankee farmers. Every such plantation now here is a powerful centre of civilization, & on Kauai & Maui, it is pleasant to see, that Gospel ordinances are sustained on & about these sugar farms. Mr. Green & Mr. Dole, preach to small congregations of whites every sabbath. Several persons of a little means have united to start another on a land of mine, where I first settled on Maui, & Mr. Geo. E. Beckwith is unable to teach, owing to weak eyes, we have invited him to come out & take charge of it. I think he will come & will do good. But we want 40 more such & the investment would pay. Our sugar farmers are all prospering. But I must close, as the mail is about to leave.

Very truly yours. R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong, Honolulu Oct. 6. 1858 Recd Nov. 30.

Honolulu, Dec 13th 1858.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.
Sect. of A. B. C. F. M.

Dear Sir;

I am directed by the Board of Trustees of Oahu College, to introduce to you, the Rev. Wm. P. Alexander, as their duly accredited agent, to complete the endowment of the institution, collect books, and if necessary, procure another instructor; in other ways also to promote the interests of the College as he may have opportunity, while in the United States. He will, of course wish to confer with you and the Prudential committee, on the object of his mission, and he is commended to your confidence, and Christian regard. More than a quarter of a centuries faithful service in his masters cause, in a foreign land, enfeebled health, and the difficult and responsable work which takes him to that country, will we trust, secure for him the warm sympathy, and cooperation of the Committee and the friends of the Redeemer generally with whom he may meet.

On behalf of the Trustees,
Very sincerely and truly
Your Obt. Servant.

R. Armstrong,
Sec'y of Bd. of Trustees.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu Dec. 15. 1858.

Rec'd. May 4. 1859.

ack Feb. 1.

Mrs. M. Alexander

Honolulu Jan. 17. 1859.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.
Miss.y House,
Boston.

Dear Brother;

I am directed by the Trustees of Oahu College to state to you, & I much regret the necessity that compels me to do so, that at a meeting of the Board on the 14th of November, just previous to Mr. Alexanders leaving us, President Beckwith gave notice, that owing to the continued ill health of his wife, he should feel constrained ere long, to retire from the institution, & seek a colder climate; but that, Providence permitting he would remain another year, in order to afford time to the Trustees to seek a man to fill his place. This information was not wholely unexpected, for all knew something of the sufferings of Mrs. Beckwith,

Still it was received with deep regret, as the President is greatly esteemed & beloved by the students at Punahou, as well as in the community, & it may not be an easy matter to find a man who will fill his place.

Mrs Beckwith's ~~health~~ complaints are mostly of a nervous character & her physician prescribes a sea voyage & a residence in a colder climate as the most probable means of removing them. Even should he remain, Mr B. thinks he could not do justice to the institution, his wife's health continuing as it has been for a year or more, & he thinks it best to give notice in season of his intention to leave, that a person may be sought to occupy his place.

We expect therefore that on Mr Alexander's arrival in the States, he will confer with you & the Trustees there, in regard to this & all other matters pertaining to the College, & with your aid, we hope a suitable person may be obtained to stand at the head of our infant College. Very truly & respectfully yours,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu Jan. 17. 1859.
Rec'd. March 15.
Ans'd [illegible]

160

(Private) Honolulu, Jan. 18th 1859.

Rev. R. Anderson, D. D.
Miss. House,
Boston,

Dear Mother;

A few thoughts occur to me, that I will express in a private way.

The case of Mr. Bailey. It seems he is inclined to seek ordination & retain a connexion with you. He is a good, faithful man, but I doubt very much the propriety of his entering the ministry. His state of health would not admit of his teaching much, for the last few years, & required a large amount of out door exercise, to keep it even totterably comfortable. Even then his nervous system became much disordered & led him to do some strange things, entirely I think, owing to his nervous derangement. He ought in my opinion to lay aside all study, & sedantary employment, & take hold of some secular work, by which he might keep up his health & support his family. If you think proper, draw out Mr. Alexander on this subject.

I see ~~the~~ Prud. Com. has reduced the salaries ~~of~~ of some of the brethren, somewhat below ~~the~~ estimates sent to you. Although

the Committee is hard pressed for means, I doubt the wisdom of reducing the salaries a dollar below what the Special Committee estimated to be proper. Rather let the reduction be on other departments of your work. Here living grows more & more expensive every year. My own family expenses, & we live plain, were over $2800,00 last year. When the salaries are too low, the consequence is depression of spirits in some cases, in others turning aside to some secular business to make a little money, taking their children from Punahou who ought to be there, & in short a diminution of efficiency in their work among the people. This is very undesirable, & ought not to be, unless God so orders it. The tuition bills at Punahou now bear heavily on some of the brethren, & it was in view of this that the Special Com. recommended a little increase of salary.

In regard to Pres. Beckwith, I would add, that his wife being my oldest daughter, who was eleven years in Mr Chapmans family, in Springfield, & was three years in the Sem.y at Mt Holyoke, no one aside from her husband is better acquainted with her case than myself. Her nervous system was seriously injured while in that Sem.y by over taxing the brain & she has never recovered from it. She has been a great sufferer & at times we have feared that she would loose her reason. Her great difficulty is inability to sleep, & all hope of her enjoying health in a warm climate have about

vanished. Removal to a colder climate may not, in fact I fear, will not be the means of her restoration to health, but the prospect is that she may enjoy much better health there than here. It is a great trial to me in prospect, for I had fondly cherished the hope of seeing these children pursuing a long course of usefulness by my side. Mr. B. also says he does not expect ever to find so good a place to live & labor; but the affliction is upon us, & we must bow to the Lord's will.

Our Legislature is now in session, at work on the revised Statutes, & I am sorry to see a strong tendency among the higher chiefs to relax the laws against intemperance, & leave all to buy & sell & drink alike. Hitherto selling to natives has been forbidden under a heavy penalty. The King has about him some men who love strong drink & they don't like laws that restrain such practises or make them disreputable. But thus far the house of Representatives to a man stand to the old policy.

What the late difficulty with the French Commissioner will lead to, I do not know, but I fear more trouble; the French are such a strange people. It seems to gall them, that they cannot have the influence & importance here that English & Americans have, although they are so few & have so little commerce with the Islands.

I believe I have not yet thanked you for your good letter in reference to my son, William Nevins, & for the inte

rest you have taken in his case. I assure you I do feel grateful for this & a thousand other favors you have shown. I only wish I were in circumstances to reciprocate them. There are moreover few kindnesses more deeply felt by a parent than a favor shown to a child long & far from home, especially when just going out into the great world.

Wm N. writes me that he has some prospect of getting a place in a lawyers office in New York, but had not yet fully succeeded.

Openings for our young people are so few at the Islands, that I sometimes fear, after all that most of them will remove to other parts, especially to the States on the Atlantic coast, where there is more scope for them. With the exception of sugar making, farming (wh. requires a large capital) here is poor business, don't pay, & our commerce is limited & overdone. We have lived on the whales, but they decrease from year to year.

Molokai is brightening up a new under the vigorous measures of your worthy young name sake, A. B. Forbes. His marriage with Miss Maria P. I regard as a very happy one.

The religious prospects of the foreign community in Honolulu, to my view, were never so bright as now. The new Minister of Fort St. Church Rev. Eli Corwin draws in full houses, & seems to be gaining ground every day. God send us his Spirit, & then we shall have life indeed.

H. W. Marsh, son of Rev. Marsh, whom you introduced to me some seven years ago, who was my clerk for three years, then entered the prof. of law with good success, now lies at the point of death. Very truly yours in Christian bonds,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong 28

Honolulu, April 12, 1859.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.,
Miss. House,
Boston;

Dear Brother;

At a meeting of the Trustees of Oahu College on the 8th inst. the following resolution was adopted.

"Resolved, That the Secretary be requested to state to Dr Anderson, of the American Board, the circumstances of the mission families interested in the College, & request that the Board pay the salary of Mr Spooner in future, should the Trustees find it to be necessary, in order to enable parents to send their children to the institution".

In performing this duty I would state that the boarding at Punahou during last term, including a proportional amount for Mr Spooners salary was about $3.50 per week. This was for boarding

only. Now when we add to this the cost of books, tuition, clothing, & travelling, to & from the institution, it will bring the necessary expense of supporting a scholar there to about $250 a year, & where there are two, three, & four from one family there, as in the case of Messrs Alexander, Lyman, Johnson & others, it is very apparent that with their small salaries, these brethren cannot continue to send their children. Some of them are already in debt & embarrassed, & the young men talk of boarding themselves, or leaving off study entirely, for want of means to go on with. Either course is very undesirable, & we see no way to lighten the burden of these parents so feasable, as for the Board, for the time being, until an endowment can be secured, to resume the support of the steward, Mr Spooner, when, as at present, the trustees find, that by charging it in the board bills, it must oblige many of the parents to take away their children.

The addition of the tuition to former charges is an important item & the Special committee took this into account in estimating the salaries of the brethren; but these have been cut down below those estimates, & this is one reason of the embarrassment. When the burden of Mr Spooners salary & tuition also are laid upon them, in addition to what they have been accustomed to pay, it is more than they feel able to endure. In order to relieve the case somewhat, the Trustees have applied a portion of the receipts for tuition to reducing the cost of board, washing, lights &c, so as to bring it within $3. per week, for last term, but this is taking from the department of instruction what it greatly needs, & they therefore submit very respectfully the resolution above named, to the consideration of the Board.

You will understand that the cost of board, stated above, including washing, lights &c. is over & above the avails from the land, & herd. But for these it would be much higher.

Look at the case of Mr Alexander who I hope is now with you. His salary, provided he gets it all, is $1200. He has five pupils in school, his tuition bills amount to $180. a year & the boarding to $600. at $3 per week; that is $780, leaving only $520 to support the balance of his family, the whole of it during vacations, travelling expenses to & from school, clothing &c. But he does not receive the full $500 from his people especially now when he is from them, & this makes his case the more trying.

The case of Messrs Johnson, Lyman, Lyons

& perhaps others, are very similar to that of Mr. A. & I do not see how they can keep their children at Punahou, with their present salaries, & pay tuition, & Mrs. Spooner's salary, in their board bills.

The Trustees therefore beg to call the attention of the Board to this state of things & ask for ~~the~~ resolution a favorable consideration.

I remain, very truly
yours in Christian bonds
R. Armstrong.
Sec. of Bd. of Trustees

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu Apr. 12. 59.
Rec'd May 27.
[illegible]
Mr. Spooner's salary.

Rev. R. Armstrong 162

Rec'd. June 27.

Ans. Aug. 15

Honolulu, May 7. 1859

Rev. R. Anderson D. D. Sec. A. B. C. F. M.

Miss. House, Boston;

Dear Brother:

Your favor of Mar. 18th is just received, & as I am just off on a tour to visit schools I will say in a word that the Board of Education yesterday authorized me to inform the Board that it is prepared to grant land estimated at $10.000 towards the endowment of Oahu Col. just as soon as the New Civil Code shall take effect, which will be the

first day of August next. The new code code gives us full power to do so, & the matter is all settled, except the execution of the necessary conveyances. So far good. Let us take courage & work on.

I had the same idea with you at first in regard to Mr. McKarth, but when he stated it to the sisters, it was thought best to let it be known, & let Mr. A. lay his plans to find a successor as soon as he can. Who he is to be I do not know, but the Lord knows. He will find him.

We want more funds from the Nat'l Society to issue tracts against popery. The Romanists have waked up with great zeal & are scattering their tracts like leaves of autumn, attacking us, myself in particular, with great fierceness.

Ten sisters of charity & two priests from France have just arrived & are making quite a stir. Talk with Bro. Clark about this & try to get us help. We must have a "monthly" paper regularly devoted to religious defense.

Things look more favorable in regard to France affairs; but not settled

by any means.
I shall write you more at leisure soon, on several subject.
In haste
Yours as ever,
R. Armstrong.

(Private) 163

Honolulu, May 27. 1859.

Rev. R. Anderson D. D.,
Miss^y House,
Boston.

Dear Brother:

Please read the enclosed & forward it to Bro. Clark, if you know his whereabouts. It relates to a matter of great importance to our cause here, & of some delicacy to manage. We have no more faithful & every way worthy man than Bro. Clark, but as things now are, and as he now is, he is not at all adequate to the wants of the first church. My idea is, if you will send us a well selected man, we will place him at Kohala or South Kona, & bring Bond or Paris here. Bond is preferable, but I fear he would not come, as it is hot here, & his wife's health is feeble, & would be called upon to entertain a good deal. He (Mr. Bond) might however

be induced to come, & I know of no one who would be more likely, with God's blessing to fill the place well. Mr Bond is a man of all work - can do a great many things & do them well. He has not only grace, but gumption & grit, - two very important items in the qualifications of a missionary.

The final act for ratifying the French Treaty was performed on Thursday last. The government of the Emperor rejected the additional article which was proposed here & intended to obviate the objections to the Treaty, & let us know in a pretty imperative tone, that it must be ratified without that article, as it was negotiated here under the King's eye & with his consent. In order to avoid another outbreak with France, the King has ratified it. But it is a bitter pill - the worst of all our treaties, & in my view, it will create great embarrassment & difficulty. Under it, all official documents in the French language are to be received in all departments of the government. Of course a corps of translators must be employed, & perhaps the French language taught in our schools, or some of them. The priests of course will expect to be em-

ployed, as M. Perrin suggests to teach French. Another difficulty also is pending with the French commissioner, in reference to a sailor, that may give us trouble. As usual, when the government officials of France gain an advantage, the Romish priests are on hand, to improve their opportunity - Ten "sisters of the sacred heart" & two priests have arrived from France, & there is new life in all that camp. We are called upon to look up to the hills whence cometh our strength & renew our efforts to save the people. Pray for us, that this land may not again be overshadowed by a form idolatry little better than that which was abolished by the sword some forty years ago.

If Mr. Alexander does not find a President, my idea is to make him President of O. College. So far as scholarship, amiable disposition, wisdom to direct, industry & popularity are concerned, he would fill the place well; His health is hardly sufficient, & he has not an acquaintance with the most modern improvements in methods of teaching. But I hope he will find the man for the place, & leave the Wailuku pastor to go on with his charge.

All the funds on hand belonging to our printing concern, having been transfered to the salaries, in order to make up the $1700 reduction, we shall be

badly off for religious books for the people, unless you can, in some way, afford us aid soon, in this respect.

Allow me to suggest, that you take up the matter of a man for Mr Clarks church with him, in good earnest, as the necessity is such, as not to admit of delay. Honolulu does need more missionary labor amazingly.

Mr Bingham, from the tone of his letter, evidently wishes to return to Honolulu. If he is to be sent out by the Board I should say decidedly "no". Mr B. is an excellent man, & did a great work here but he is too old to be efficient now; & we have already here about us several very worthy, but disabled & superannuated brethren, who are laid on the shelf. What we want here is a well drilled, skillful, prudent, & brave soldier in the full vigor of youth, or manhood.

Very kind regards to your family in whom I feel much interest after my pleasant little visit.

By the way, I sent you a bag of Hawaiian coffee in the ship Syren, bound to New Bedford, about a month ago. Take notice. Mr Chamberlain & daughter are on the same vessel.

As ever yours,

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong
Honolulu Aug. 27. 1859.
Recd Oct. 3.
Reply

Honolulu, June 30. 1859.

Rev. R. Anderson D.D.

Dear Brother;

I am directed to write you on two seperate subjects, & by two different bodies of men.

1. The Trustees of Oahu College direct me, on their behalf, to ask of the Board a small grant, for the repair of buildings at Punahou. The roofing of a portion of the buildings, & it is a considerable part, is worn out, & will require to be replaced, before another rainy season shall come on, in order to save the buildings from utter ruin. I have examined them myself, & I see the repairs must be made soon, or the buildings, & they are part of the lodging rooms, & the cook house will be uninhabitable. The whole buildings also require painting, in order to preserve them. The cost of these repairs will be not less than one thousand dollars, in fact, it will be difficult to bring it within this limit.

Be kind enough then to lay this appli-
-cation before the Presd. Committee, &
inform us of the result, as soon as
convenient. The rainey season
sets in, in the fall & the work ought
to be done before that time, if possible.

2. The Special committee, at its
last meeting, directed me to state to
the Presd. committee, that we con-
sider the grant of the Board to Mr. Alex-
-ander, for the present year, quite in-
-adequate to the wants of his family,
& commend his case to your kind
consideration. It is difficult for the
pastors, at any time, to collect their
support or even part of it, from their
poor people; & now, that Mr. Alexan-
der is absent from his people, he
will receive nothing from them.
This is now the prospect. Should he
receive any thing however, while
he is absent, from his church, he will
no doubt consider as part of any addi-
-tional grant you may make him.
He is now considerably in debt, as
Mr. Castle has informed you, &
without more aid his children here
must suffer. As to what amount
he ought to receive, you can judge
better than me, after considering

or communicating with him.

It is with regret & pain that we call on the Board for additional funds to carry on our work, knowing you are pressed on every hand, at the present time; but it seems inevitable, unless we leave things to perish & the cause to suffer.

The late annual examination of Oahu College was a most satisfactory one, & compelled even its enemies to commend it. A well educated Roman catholic, & graduate of Union College who was present at the rhetorical exercises, told me he considered them equal to any he ever saw. A Cambridge Student who sat beside me on the platform, whispered in my ear while a class was reciting splendidly in Greek, "this Institution is the great light of civilization in the Pacific."

All regret that Pres. Beckwith is to leave, but there seems to be no remedy for it. We hope & pray that with your aid Bro. Alexander will find a good man to succeed him.

I would write some things privately had I the time; but I have not, & I can only add my aloha.

R. Armstrong.

Rev. R. Armstrong

Honolulu June 30, 1859.

Rec'd. Aug. 19.

Ans. Aug 30

Grants

Pruded Catd

Mr. Alexander's

[illegible]

115

Fr. Peale;

Honolulu, Oct. 1859.

Dear Sir;

I thank you for introducing to me, Mr Dana, the Boston lawyer. I find him very genial, wide awake & friendly. He seems to me to manifest a Christian spirit; takes great interest in all our work, & seems to comprehend everything as by intuition. He says he will write about our infant college, which he visited & seemed much gratified. He is a prodigiously smart fellow. Please send more such this way.

Yours truly,

R. Armstrong

Rev. R. Armstrong,
Honolulu Oct. 1859.
Rec'd Dec. 12.

Ans Feb. 1.